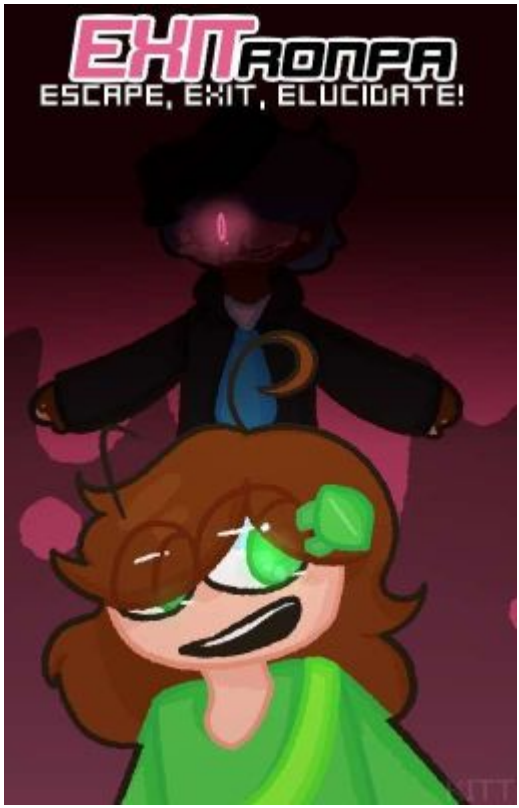

EXITRONPA
ESCAPE, EXIT, ELUCIDATE!

[-] Prologue

Exit Academy.

The place I'll be learning at for the next few days. Oh my tree.. This is really exciting! I was walking with my bag by my side, as I looked through it to see if I had packed all of my belongings. This met so much for me... I can't believe I'm actually here. Wait! Silly me, I forgot to introduce myself. My name is Leafy. Leafy Lemon, and I'm one of the lucky students who will be attending EXIT academy! I don't actually know if it means anything or why the name was chosen... Anyhow, this isn't your average school where anybody could attend.. The school handpicks their students from the best of the best. Each person attending this academy has their own little talent or ultimate. Mine's the Ultimate Botanist! Pretty neat, right?

I better get going now.. My first day of school in this wonderful place. The bell rung as I perked up to the noises. I'm so excited to see who I'll meet! Seems like I'm the last to arrive.. Nobody else is nearby! Well, I walked for the doors, looking around eagerly as I entered the entrance of the school.. The place that I'll be calling home.

--
A prologue!
Wow uhm.. I'm really dang excited to start this. I hope you all enjoy the chapters and artworks!

[1] Something's wrong...

I woke up, looking around as I sat up. I was on the floor, resting on what seemed to be grass. Wait, grass? I swore I was inside of the school.... Well, it looked like I was in some room. I stood up, examining the room. The walls were painted a sky blue with green scribbles at the bottom.. It was like they were trying to pretend this was some room of the outdoors. How odd. I looked at my outfit. It was a regular green long sleeve shirt, with my trusty lime green bag wrapped around it. That's an relief. I ran my hand through my brown hair as I decided to confidently walk out of the room. I moved my hand towards the doorknob, and when I was about to grab it and open it, the door suddenly swung open and behind was a person. Behind the door was a fairly tall and thin girl, with orange hair and a grey headband on her head. She wore a pink jacket and under that was a orange shirt, with a yin-yang symbol on it. She tilted her head. "Oh, hey Match! Look who I found." The girl called out before looking back at me. "..Uhm.. Hi?" I was confused, who was this girl? She didn't look like anyone I recongized. "..Hey, name's Pencil. Pencil Grayphite." She took her hand out, and I reluctantly grabbed it, shaking it. "I'm the Ultimate Vlogger." She looked at my apperance, raising an eyebrow. "Since you're here, you clearly have a talent... What is it?" I was nervous, fidgeting with my fingers before realizing she was letting me speak.

"Oh! I'm Leafy Lemon, the Ultimate Botanist! Nice to meet you.. Who's this 'Match' girl?" I thought it was a good time to ask. She seemed nice! Same as this Match person! They must be friends... Well, than it's clear that they're cool! Everyone is going to be so cool in this school.. Well, assuming we are still in the actual school. Pencil glanced over to the side, before taking a step to the side to show another girl. Her hair was brown with red hair dyed at the tips, her

hair was put up in a bun using a red band. She wore a slightly magenta and red colored dress, with the collar and ends of sleeves having these light red puffs at the end. "Ooh, like hi! Like, who's this new girl, Pence-Pence?" I assumed this was the Match person that Pencil called for before introducing herself. "Ah, this is Leafy. How about you go and introduce yourself?" She asked, holding on the other girl's hand. "Oh! Of course!" She pulled away from Pencil's hand, clapping her own hands together excitedly. "I'm Match! Like... Match Spark, your ultimate Fashion Designer!" She exclaimed excitedly.

I wonder how many other students are here... I decided to ask them openly. "Hey uhm, have you seen any other students by any chance?" I tilted my head, waiting for one of them to answer. Pencil decided to take lead, and answer for the both of them. "Well, no. That's why we were opening doors randomly in the hallway. We woke up in the same weird science lab room... Anyways, we're going to go continue to search. Want to come with us to try to find some more students?"

Pencil asked, with a small smile. She must've been glad to find me... Well, there's only one thing I could reply with. "Of course!" I excitedly shouted, before I walked out of the room and Pencil closed the door behind me. We began to walk down the hallways... It was weird, there was no students.. This was a school, right? We were trying any new doors we passed, all of them were either locked or empty.

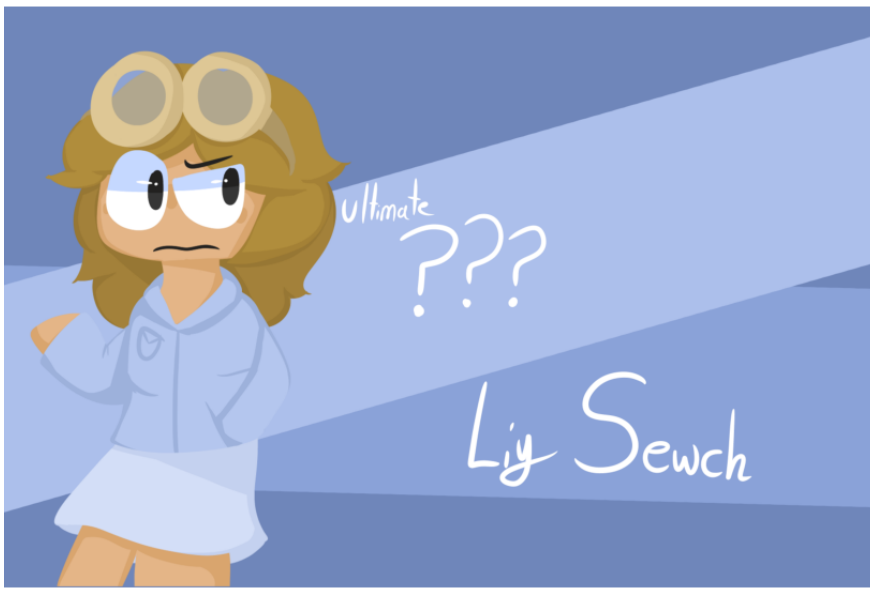
This was a little frustrating, and I was about to give up... That was until I heard a bunch of chattering coming from somewhere. Pencil and Match must've heard it too! They paused, looking back at me. "..You girls hear that too?" Pencil asked up, surprised.. There was quite a bit of yelling.. I nodded, "Yeah..." The two girls whispered to eachother, nodding before beginning to walk down the hallway in the direction of the noises. There was a lot of conversation going on, but I couldn't make out anything they were saying. We turned a corner, as I looked around to find a door locked that had a small sign on it. 'LOCKED FOR LATER USE.' on it, I read it before running back to Match and Pencil to catch up with them.

We continued to follow the sound of the noise. Eventually, we stopped infront of what seemed to be two doors.. How interesting. I gulped nervously, as Pencil took a step forward and swung the doors open using her hands to reveal a gym with 13 other people... In total that's 16! How particular.. These must be the other students. I rushed past Pencil and Match and waved. "Hi!!!" I waved eagerly. Wow, they all look amazing! None of them really noticed.. That must've been because two of them were arguing. A short boy in a orange tanktop and a boy with suspenders and a green bowtie were talking about stuff, as a small crowd formed. "SHUTUPSHUTUPSHUTUP-!" The young boy screamed at him, with the most furious look. "Chill out, Jr! It's just a joke..." The other boy seemed to be rather cool with his frustrated yells, which is.. Interesting. I watched until somebody quietly tapped me on the shoulder.

"Huh-?"

I turned around to find a girl wearing a jean jacket and goggles. Her hair went down to her shoulders, but it was a tad bit longer from what I could see. She seemed nervous, but waved. "Hey.. You're that girl who shouted earlier, right?" She asked, her hands in her pockets. "Oh, yeah! That's me, haha!" I laughed nervously.. Wow, that really

was embarassing huh.. "Ah, well.. It's nice to meet you. My name.. I think it was Liy.. Liy Sewch.." She shuffled awkwardly, "...And my talent? Well.. I don't think I actually have one, or I don't know if I do."



"Oooh! Well, if you rememeber, tell me!" I grinned, before she waved and walked off.. Maybe to introduce herself to some others, I don't really know. Wait, I never introduced myself to her! Darn.. I'll have to

tell her later.." I crossed my arms before deciding to try to avoid the fight ongoing and to look for some others to talk to. Mostly everyone was busy watching the fight, so it was hard to see who to talk to.. Well that was until I noticed two boys talking to eachother, seems like the next two people that I'm introducing myself to are them! I walked up to them, one of them wore a beanie with a black tucked collar shirt both of them with a white circle on them with the number 8 on it.. What an interesting choice of clothing! I glanced over to the other male, who wore a grey-skirt like thing with a dark magenta jacket. They both had dark skintones and were now looking at me with confusion. I finally realized that, perking up with excitement.

"Hiya! I'm Leafy. Your Ultimate Botanist! Who are you two?" I introduced myself, before looking at them... The boy with the black clothing bit his lip, looking away. The anti-social type hm? Oh well, what about the other boy? The other boy gave a small wave, smiling and revealing his sharp tooth to me. Oh, that itimidated me a little... He had a small scar on his cheek as he spoke. "Yo! Name's Stapy Sawyer! Your Ultimate Grave Digger!" He seemed really cool! Glad to be able to speak to him.. I glanced over to the other boy, as he shyly looked over to Stapy for some help.

"Oh yeah. This is 8-Ball, weird as fuck name huh?" Stapy joked. The guy supposedly named 8-Ball shot him a glare, making Stapy realize that wasn't very funny... "Well well, fine.. This is 8-Ball, his last name is apparently Billard and he's the ultimate Statistican. Does a lotta math in his freetime apparently!" He nudged 8-Ball playfully, before 8-Ball decided to face me and wave quietly. He was really nervous, smiling.. "Nice to meet you.." He shyly whispered before facing back

to Stapy to continue their conversation. He really did seem to be nervous, problady not trying to start any fights like those two boys from earlier had. No biggie! I won't judge.

Well.. I had nothing to do so I decided to go ahead and watch the fight.. It seems like the main thing happening right now, and there wasn't really anyone else I could talk to... I walked over to where Pencil and Match were, as they watched the agrument go down. "Hey

guys!" I walked over, grinning as Pencil looked back to wave. She didn't say anything, though, must be too invested with Match to see this fight.. I walked up beside the two to watch it go down.

"I CAN'T FUCKING BELIEVE YOU! I'M NOT TINY!" The boy screamed, seemingly throwing a little tantrum infront of the whole school.. I wondered what their talent was.. They didn't look like they had one, similar to Liy.. But surely they had to! There wouldn't be just 2 randos here... I'll have to ask later. "Eyy, don't worry! I mean, nobody will think you're tiny besides the fact you have Jr in your name!" The guy apparently named something jr was getting angrier as he spoke. "SHUT UP ABOUT MY NAME! IT ISN'T FUCKING IMPORTANT GELATIN." He spat, as he crossed his arms and looked away from who seems to be Gelatin. He had his head high up, closing his eyes and refusing to look at the crowd that had formed due to their dispute. "Calm down bro! We're just vibin' here man." That ticked off the boy. He turned around, walking up to Gelatin and despite his size, grabbing him by the neck. This surprised the crowd, as they broke out in whispers and murmurs.. Even Pencil and Match were whispering as I awkwardly watched the conflict.. This isn't going to turn out good.

"LOOK HERE, YOU LITTLE SHIT. STOP CALLING ME SHORT OR YOU'LL GET I-" I couldn't help it anymore, and I ran through Pencil and Match, "Hey wait-! Stop! You're going to hurt him!" I nervously said, as the small boy.. Hopefully he wouldn't mind if I called him that... Dropped Gelatin, as he fell to the floor. Everyone was frozen, surprised... "WHY SHOULDN'T I HURT HIM?! I COULD KILL HIM WITH JUST MY BARE FISTS IF I WANTED TO!-"

"Oh dear.. How about you DON'T do that quite yet?"

[1] Meet your Host!

...What?

Who just said that? I looked around, confused

-.. Apparently, there was a stage behind all of the crowd and there stood a man behind the pedestal onstage. Everyone turned over to it, they wore an eyepatch with a suit and a fedora. "Greetings, students! I'm glad you could all come!" Huh? All? Just 16? Something seems off.. I swore this.. Whoever this is, isn't Four. I remembered that our headmaster is Four, but.. Who is this creep? "WHO THE FUCK ARE YOU?!" The young boy screamed again, he was furious of being interrupted.. But thank god they saved my life. "Nice you asked, heheh... I'm Monoroku! And YOU, yes YOU! Are in my killing game!"

Did.. Did I hear that right? Oh my god.. I.. Killing game..? "W-What..?" They all gasped, talking within themselves before looking back up to Monoroku. "Yes yes, you all may be shocked.. But don't worry! I have a little explaination on how this.. Game will go down."

"Now, you'll all be living the rest of your lives in this very school! Well.. That is unless..." Unless what?? I wanted freedom so bad... Surely it isn't a b- "You reach the requirements of our special little graduation! Let me explain. You'll all be living in the walls of this academy, in peace.. Well, that is unless, somebody.. Let's say... Breaks that peace. They could leave!" Breaks that peace? Wah..? "What do you exactly mean by.. Breaking that peace?" Pencil nervously spoke

up, not liking the direction of this conversation. I could just.. Tell. Her voice was shaky, and nobody would like what was about to say next. "Easy! A student must kill another student!! Any method, any way.. Brutal or not! You should have fun with this!" They clapped their hands eagerly, looking at the shocked expressions of all of us.. We were.. Terrified. They.. They want US to hurt eachother? We just met! No way.. Even if it means me staying here.. I can't just... Go out and kill someone just to see the real world again! Oh my.. I'm going to miss my friends.. "Now, whoever successfully kills.. And gets away with their crime may go off free! If not... They will face consequences if caught.." ...Consequences? Oh god.. That doesn't sound good. "B-But surely nobody will.. K-Kill eachother..?" A boy spoke, with a weak and fragile voice. He wore a oversized brown leather jacket with curly blonde hair and sunglasses. "Well, we'll have to see about that. Anyhow, I've snuck a PDA in all of your pockets, I advise checking out our school regulations before leaving the gym! Cheers~" Suddenly, he disappeared... It was like he was never there. All that was left was a small slip of paper that landed infront of the stage with the number 6 written on it in cursive. I stared at the slip.

Death.. Oh my god.. Everyone else seemed to be terrified, even the boy beside me. I gulped, before pulling out my PDA. It fitted in both of my hands, and had a small pointer to go with it. I put back the pointer back into the PDA before booting it up to be presented with text. The thing looked old school and odd, weird and it stands out compared to the rest of the academy.. As it turned on, it presented the rules.. The regulations I would have to follow in the school. It terrified me. Just the fact I'm staying here.. For the rest of my life.. With these 15.. What if... What if one of us snaps.. Kills another... It's a horrifying thought, and I didn't want to think about it. I really didn't. The PDA began to show text on the screen, as it read as this:

"EXIT Academy has rules for every attending student within the school. Any rules broken will result in the rule breaker being punished in one way or another.

#1 - All students must live in the academy and is prohibited from leaving it.

#2 - When a murder is committed, a class trial will be held. All surviving students must attend, or they will face consequences.

#3 - If the blackened is identified correctly during the class trial, only the blackened will be punished. If not, the rest of the students will be punished.

#4 - Night Time is designated from 10 P.M. to 8 A.M. where the Gymnasium, Dining Hall, and select rooms will be locked and closed during this time.

#5 - Any acts of violence towards any faculty members or Monoroku are strictly prohibited and will lead to severe consequences.

#6 - Damaging the PDAs are prohibited, as the items are very important.

#7 - A body discovery announcement will only occur if three or more students discover the body.

#8 - All students are free to explore any unlocked or open space of the academy.

#9 - Monoroku will never be the cause or partake in any of the murders.

#10 - Monoroku may add additional regulations to this list at any time."

After reading the rules, I decided to turn it off. By the time I looked up, I noticed a few of the students finishing before me and leaving the gymnasium. I was nervous... We're really in this kiling game, huh.. I suddenly looked beside me, screaming as I saw the boy from earlier. "Hey! Uhm... Thanks for helping me back there, man.. I wouldn't know what to do if he did actually hurt me.." He laughed awkwardly. "Anyways, name's Gelatin Lichtman. Cool to meet ya, I'm just the Ultimate Comedian." He messed with his bowtie. He seemed friendly.. I think I could possibly trust him.

"Oh, nice to meet you Gelatin..." I smiled, as I examined his features.. He had freckles dotting around his face with a light green bandaid smacked right onto his cheek. He seemed young and innocent... I wondered where that other guy was... My questions were shortly answered as I was about to leave to the hallways to try to find him. "HEY YOU!"

I swiftly turned around, gulping as I saw the short boy calling for me

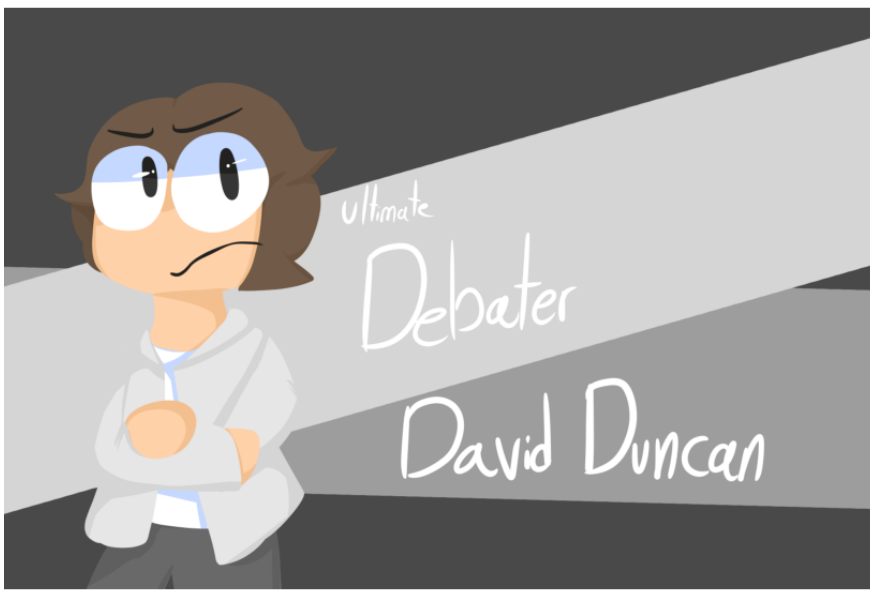
and walking up to me with a furious face. "...You're damn lucky that fucker stopped you." He crossed his arms before staring at my apperance. "What the fuck are you? Some gardener?" I was scared, but hey... He's not that bad..? I don't really know how to word it. "W-Well yeah! I am some gardener, a botanist to be more exact!" I smiled, but the boy didn't seem impressed. "Jee, that's some boring ass talent. Name's Firey Jr. Despite my size, I'm the Ultimate Weightlifter. You?"

Ultimate Weightlifter..? But- Honestly, I'm not going to question it. "My name is Leafy Lemon. I'm glad to meet you! Just.. Please don't hurt me..?" I smiled awkwardly. "No promises." He shrugged before he pushed me to the side and walked out of the gym. Rough... Oh well. There weren't many people in the gym, and most of them I've already introduced myself to... So, I decided to wait a few more minutes before heading out into the hallways to try to find more

people I've yet to talk to. I passed by Stapy again, and we exchanged greetings before I continued to walk down and past that room with the sign.

I wonder what the use of that room was.... Well, I wasn't going to question that right now. I noticed two people infront of me, a boy with a grey jacket and brown messy hair and a girl with a pink long-sleeved shirt, a purple backpack, and her brown hair, darker than the boy's tied up into a ponytail. I decided the best choice was to introduce myself to them next. I hummed quietly, before walking up. The boy with the grey jacket instantly noticed me, crossing his arms and looking at my apperance. His look on his face seemed like he was judging me but... I decided to brush that off as nothing.

"Hi! I'm Leafy Lemon, the Ultimate Botanist." I grinned, waving excitedly at them. By than, the girl had noticed aswell, gazing at me. "...Ah, right. Name's David. David Duncan." The boy began to speak, walking up infront of her. He had pushed her behind him, like he was a overprotective sibling... Are they siblings..? I didn't really think much of it. "I'm the Ultimate Debater." He firmly said, taking his other hand out to shake mines. Which I shook. It was a nice interaction, but David seemed to be pretty busy.



The girl decided to speak up after a few minutes of exchanged silence, nudging David to move. He reluctantly did and let her talk to me.. Yeah, they definitely had some sort of bond. She smiled at me, waving and shaking my hand before beginning to introduce herself to me. David was silently watching from behind, squinting at me.

He clearly didn't trust me, but I didn't really... Care? I mean, the girl seemed much more kinder but quiet. She was dependent on David,

from what I could tell.. "My name's.. Dora. Dora Jones." She nervously said, looking back on David. He gave her a small nod of approval, and she smiled at that. "I'm the Ultimate Spanish Translator, and it's really nice to meet you." Spanish Translator? That's interesting... "I-I- don't like speaking spanish so much, so... Please understand I won't be able to translate your words right now.." She bit her lip, before hiding back behind David.

Well, I better walk off before David tries to insult me verbally... I quietly walked past them, as I felt David stare me down before continuing with their conversations.. I wonder what they were talking about. None of my business, I guess. I continued to nagivate down the hallways, no sight of new people... I waved at 8-Ball as I passed him, but he didn't say anything. Well, I think mostly everyone had left the gym, so I should try looking harder... I felt a tap on my shoulder, turning around.

It was Pencil, by herself. "Hey, Leafy." She waved, "Oh, hi Pencil! What do you need?" I was really happy to see her again, as she was the first person I met. She seemed pretty chill, and really nice. So... I think she's somebody I definitely could trust in these rough times. "I'm going to explore the school on my own, you wanna come?" She offered, well, as much as I wanna check the place out.. I really wanted to meet new people! So, I politely declined. Pencil seemed a bit hurt when I did, but there was no clear signs as she walked past. I felt a bit bad... But, I still have like.. 5 more people to meet. As I walked to watch Pencil walk off, I bumped into someone as we fell back. "WOAH-" I was on the floor, rubbing my head as I looked around. A book and yellow sunglasses were on the sides of us both, as I looked up. A boy with blonde curly hair, and the oversized leather jacket was there. He had unbuttoned it, as it showed a mysterious weird beige cube thing on it. I didn't want to question it, most of us were kinda weird like that.

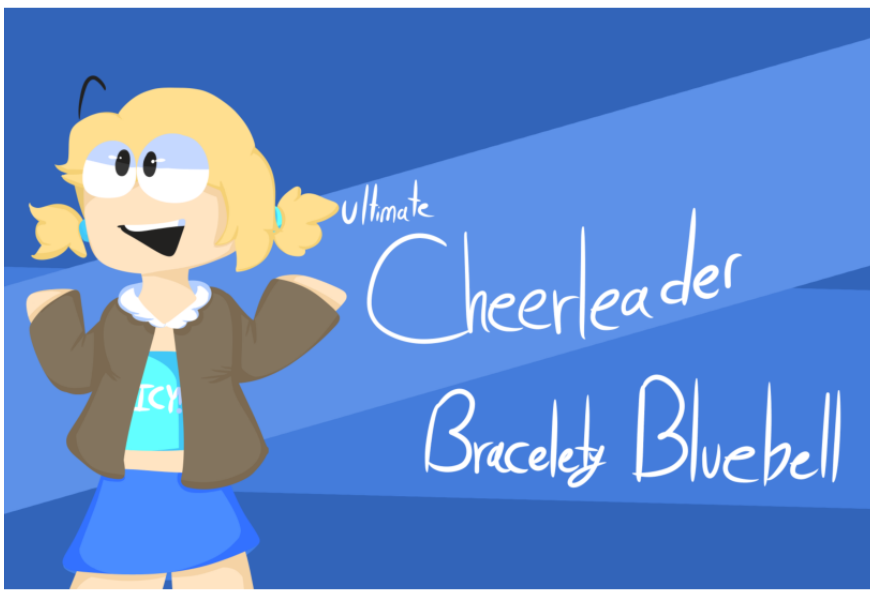
Wait! This was the boy from earlier, with that fragile voice. "Oh! It's you.." I smiled, getting up to help him up. The boy quickly grabbed his sunglasses, wearing it before accepting my help. He dusted the dirt off of his jacket, and picked up his book. "Thank you..." He mumbled, before looking up to me. "You're that girl... The one who tried to stop the fight.." Is that what they're going to recongize me for? Well, might as well. "Yep! That's me! My name's Leafy Lemon." I smiled, before the boy gave me a small smile back. "...Ah, my name is Loser... Loser Luckman." He greeted with a kind smile.. It was surpisingly comforting, and I swore I've heard his name before.. "My.. supposed talent, or the thing I'm well known for is writing. I'm the Ultimate Author." He said, holding his book tightly to his chest. OH! He wrote all of those books. "Oh wait! I know you! I read your books!" I exclaimed excitedly. Wow, he really was talented...

"O-Oh thank you.." He was blushing a little, and I assumed he had never gotten so many compliments.. "I hope we can be friends!" I excitedly said, before deciding to not overwhelm him and leave. I waved, "See you soon!" I stated, before going. Loser waved back...

I was pretty damn scared. I mean, we're in a killing game now... I should've known something was off about this place. I continued to walk down the halls, deciding to visit one of the rooms to see if

anybody was inside. Peeking in one, I noticed Match talking to someone I've yet to meet. She was short, with short hair. She had a red jacket and skirt, with what looked like a light pink shirt underneath. She wore a headband and necklace with what looks like a red gemstone on it. I'm not experienced in gems, I don't know which gems they are.... I decided to talk to the girl later to get to know about her more.

Looking into one of the rooms had a girl, a little shorter than me it looked... She was sitting on one of the desks in the classroom, drawing something. I decided to walk inside, closing the door behind me and peered over her shoulder. She wore a brown jacket with puffs at the top. You know the ones. She had a small shirt-like thing.. I can't tell if it was a tanktop of not, but it was showing her stomach. It had the words 'ICY!' printed on it, which is... Questionable? She had a blue skirt, and her blonde hair was tied into 2 pigtails. How cute. She was drawing herself... And some other girl, I couldn't make out much details, so I decided to ask.. "Hey.. Whatcha drawing?" The girl was surprised to see me, but smiled. In a high-pitched voice, that was almost to the extent of screaming, she smiled. "I'M DRAWING ME AND ICY!" I covered my ears, wincing... "I-Icy..?" I rememeber that name... Wait.. Ice? She's talking about Ice.. "YEAH! SHE'S SO COOL AND SHE GOES TO MY SCHOOL!! YOU SHOULD MEET HER ONCE WE GET OUT OF HERE!" She exclaimed, before going back to drawing.. Oh god, this girl is obsessed with her. "..Y-Yeah but.. What's your name?" I nervously asked. Pleasedontscreampleasedontscream- "IM BRACELETY BLUEBELL! MY SCHOOL KNOWS ME AS THE ULTIMATE CHEERLEADER BECAUSE I SUPPORT ICCYY SO MUCH!!" She giggled, before going back to her drawing.



Well... That was a quick interaction.

I decided to go leave the classroom, hearing enough... I was terrified, I really was. This whole killing game business and living here.. I'll never be able to see Ice.. Or Firey- Wait.. When did Firey have a younger brother? I'll have to ask once I get back..

Well, if I do. That is.....

--

hi im having too much fun with this haha-

[1] Working Together..

There's a few more people I have to meet up. I passed by Gelatin as we gave eachother fist bumps, and went to look for more people... Most of the hallways were empty, figures, the school is pretty large.... I hummed to myself, excitedly looking as I noticed a tall boy in the distance, he had an apron on with what seemed to be balloons jammed in there. He wore a collar, and his hair was tied up into a small ponytail. That's a new person! I decided to go run up to him. "Hey hey hey hey!" I called out, waving my arms as I ran. He seemed to had noticed me, turning over to me in surprise as he put out his arms. "S-Stop!" He nervously said. I tilted my head, as I paused. He was in relief, and a little irritated over my sudden encounter with him. Dangit.. I messed up again.

After a bit of silence, he began to speak. "..Don't do that again.... Anyways, I'm Balloony Coretin, the Ultimate Balloon Artist. You....?" He seemed to be nervous, fidgeting with his fingers as he kept his gaze on me. He had a small mole on his cheek and I guess I sortof messed up with first impressions. Oh well, I better introduce myself! I smiled at him.

"My name's Leafy! Leafy Lemon, it's so nice to meet you. I'm the Ultimate Botanist." I eagerly said, grabbing his hand to shake it. After I did, he quickly pulled it away.. Looking at me, nervous. Oh gosh... I better.. Walk away. Before Balloony could say anything, I quickly sped walk away. I hate confrontation... Uhm..

Yeah! Anyways, let's go find more people. I was exploring the

hallways, noticing nothing too important. I decided to boot up my PDA to see if anything interesting updated. Which.. It did! Suddenly, the PDA displayed a map of the school, making me realize I was going in circles for the most part. I looked over to where the area was labeled with 'ROOMS' were, and began to walk in that direction. I noticed a few of the people i've met before, exchanging a hello or waving as I walked closer to where the rooms would be. Our rooms.. The ones we'd be staying in. I walked into the hallway with the rooms, and saw two new people. Same as Dora, David, Liy, Match, and Loser. I ignored the ones I've already met, walking up to one of them. It was a rather chubby boy, with blonde curly hair, similar to Loser's, you can say.

Speaking of Loser. He seemed to be talking to him, about something... I didn't want to bother them, so I went to the other boy. He was alone, and leaned against the wall and watched everyone else do their own thing. He seemed to had noticed me, and glared at me. "What are you looking at?" He hissed, surpising me... I nervously fidgeted with my fingers. "U-Uhm... I just wanted to know more about you!" He faced towards me, shuffling his hands in his pockets. "Roboty Rodnik, Morse Decoder. Now go away." He quickly said, before turning his body away from me... Well... That was quick.

I looked back at the other boy, who seemed to be by himself. I assumed Loser had introduced himself and left... He seemed to be looking around, not noticing me. Well, I better go ahead and introduce myself! I smiled, skipping over to him.

"Hi! I'm Le-" Before I could finish my sentence, I was very rudely interrupted by the guy. "Leafy Lemon? Loser told me about you.." I

was flattered. Loser...? He's such a nice guy for introducing myself to him! I blushed a little. "...O-Oh! That's nice to hear.. Uhm... What's your name?" I fidgeted with my fingers as he snickered a bit. He had a deep voice, and kinda shuffled around trying to be comfortable with his surroundings. "Name's Spongy Hoff. Ultimate Jet Pilot." He said, confidently crossing his arms and showing off. Huh.. He's one of THOSE people.

After being able to walk up to him, it was clear he had freckles dotted all over his face, and a bandage by the bottom of his head.. Must be a severe injuiry to get there... I won't judge! I smiled, deciding to do a bit of small talk before finally leaivng to go try to find Pencil and Match. Once I did, I noticed them talking to the last student I've yet to speak to... "Hey Pencil! Hey Match!" I waved eagerly, as I ran up to them. Pencil gave a welcoming wave, "Hey, Leafy. Have you met Ruby yet?" She asked with a calming smile.

I shook my head. "..Nope!" I looked over to Ruby, who gave me a big smile. She seemed to really positive and happy, similar to Bracelety. "Hiya! I'm Ruby!! Uhh.. Ruby Garent!" She began to think a little, flipping her hair a bit and messing with her necklace and proudly showing it off to me. "I'm the Jewelry Professional! If you see any mysterious gems or the sort, talk to me!" She seemed really pleased to meet me, and I'm glad...

"Nice to meet you Ruby!" I grinned back, she seemed like a perfect ally in such difficult times.. Same as Match and Pencil! They all looked so nice.. Well, besides a few, which should be obvious.. Not naming any names (Roboty). Whatever it was, I need to work with everyone else and try to get along so I don't get killed! Not like anyone would.... Well, oh well.. Night was soon to come, as 10 PM came along. The nearby screen that was originally displaying the map

soon changed channels to Monoroku's face. "Heheheh~ It's 10PM students! Time to find your designated sleeping quarters and have a nice rest... We have lots to do tomorrow morning!" He said, before the channel shut off.. I looked around, noticing each of the plates hanging on the doors has our faces imprinted in it, with a name on it. I eventually found mine and entered it.

Inside was a room that had a green wallpaper, and a blue carpeted floor. It had an attached bathroom, and was themed around my talent. There were plants growing on various nearby shelves with various.. dangerous.. garden tools hanging on the walls. I looked over to my bed, which was covered in a leaf green print. I smiled, as I fell myself onto it. Well... There's a lot to do tomorrow so...

I better get sleeping. I turned out the lights, and slowly drifted off to sleep.

---

[1] ....Already..?

I slowly woke up, raising up from the bed... I checked the supposed clock beside of me, it said 6:30 AM. I yawned, rubbing my eyes... I moved my hand through my hair, as I began to move out of my bed and make my bed... I had a few more minutes until it was offically morning according to school regulations, so I began to walk over to the bathroom. I washed my face, smiling as I put my leaf hairclip in my hair and grabbed my bag that was on the floor beside my bed. I didn't really have any new clothes so I kept the ones I had when I first woke up. I was really excited to go meet everyone else.. By the time I was ready, the screen in my room began to change channels.

"Good Morning Students! It is offically 7 AM, and Night Time is offically over! The doors will be unlocked, and you are all free to leave your dorms." After hearing the announcement, I quickly spedwalk out to see everyone else. Some of them stayed out, but I noticed Pencil as one of the ones who had left her room. I ran up to her and hugged her. "Woah- Calm down Leafy! How long have you been awake?" She laughed a little, pushing me away from her. I jumped excitedly. "Not for awhile! I had a great rest, you?" Pencil smiled, patting my hair. I was a little shorter than her, but that didn't matter. "I've been fine.." She mumbled, before looking over to the side. Next to her room was Match's, and out she had come. She looked really tired, but instantly had a big smile as she went to go hug Pencil... Pencil smiled, patting Match's shoulder. "Hey Pence Pence! Hey Leafy.." She didn't appear so enthustatic about greeting me, and I smiled, waving.. Before I walked off.

I looked around, exploring the halls of the school. I was so excited to make new friends and to get to know everyone here! I was so excited to just.. Enjoy school life, I nearly forgot we were in a killing game.. But.... Nobody will kill! Surely not! No way! I hummed happily as I walked down the halls, checking each room.. Most of the rooms were plain classrooms, with weird things written on the whiteboard. I went

to go chat to some of the other classmates, trying to avoid people like Spongy, Roboty, and Match.
I was thrilled to see a lotta familiar faces in the halls, walking up to one. Whom was Liy. "Hey Liy!" I smiled, waving at her. Liy had her hands in her pockets, giving me a smile. "Oh, hey Leafy." I fidgeted with my fingers, trying to think of good discussion points. She must've noticed me being nervous, and went to speak. "...Have you ever wondered how people react to pain?" She quietly put her hand up to her chin, in a thinking expression..

"..N-No?"

"Well... It's interesting how much psychological damage you can get just from one event.. Like.. Just from losing a loved one.. A lot could happen."

"..Yeah! That.. Thats sounds scary."

"Mhm.. I wonder if Monoroku plans on ever using such techniques.."

"...I hope not..."

"We'll have to see." Liy was looking away, before facing me. "Could you perhaps meet me in my room later on today? I want to discuss a few things with you and some of the other girls in the group." She had a small smirk. "..I hope to see you there." Before I could say anything, she began to walk off. That's oddly suspicious.. But if others are there... Than that should be good, right? I didn't want to really question it.

As Liy left, I went to go find and talk to Loser.. He's a nice guy, and he seems trustworthy enough to be hanging out with. Loser was writing in what looks like a diary of sorts. I curiously sat down beside him, scooting next to him and watched him write.. He wrote in a really neat and readable font. "Ooo.. Nice writing..." I pointed out, before Loser closed it and looked at me. He was surprised to see me, trying to keep a patient smile on his face.. I could see he was struggling a bit, but didn't really see it as a bad thing.

"S-Sorry... I really didn't expect you there.." He put the book to the side, "What do you need?" He asked, before I laughed awkwardly...

Welll.. "..I just.. Really wanted to see you, and to get to know more about you! That's all." Loser smiled, "Ah, of course... Well.. I've been always writing since I was young.. Always interested in books, and well, I wanted to make my own.." He looked at his book that was placed beside of him. "Oooh! That sounds really neat! I bet that even your first books were amazing."

"...Really..?"

"Yeah! I mean, you sure have to be talented to be known as the Ultimate Author, right?"

"Well, that's true.."

"You know, you're really experienced in every field if you write books.. Like.. You've written so many that I really do look up to you.. I mean, you might even know a bit more about plants than even I do!"

"...But-"

"Sure, I might be the Ultimate Botanist, but... You're just.. So great! I don't know how to express it." I expressed my feelings, but as I looked over back at Loser.. He seemed a little uncomfortable, and I trailed off.. I felt bad for interrupting him but.. I just really wanted to express how much I liked him and his work! "...I'll... Just go.." I mumbled, nervously getting up and leaving. I shot one last look at Loser, as he looked up to me and waved... He went back to writing in his diary.

Well.. I really goofed up..

I continued to walk down the halls, my footsteps echoing as I did. I met up with a few more, exchanging greetings... I passed that weird room with the sign, that's yet to be removed... I continued to explore the place, before I heard a scream. A loud one too..

Oh no.

I began to run towards the direction, it sounded like it was coming from the gym. I was trying to move as fast as I could, my stamina

quickly draining as I reached the gym doors. Some others seemed to already be in the gym, beside me was Loser and Ruby.. They both were clearly nervous as the 3 of us entered the gym with the other students. The scream had came from Dora. And infront of her was a dead body....

A body.

"Already-? Oh my g- Oh." Monoroku had appeared at the stage, staring at the corpse. "...Ah, right. That's Four. Your supposed... ***Headmaster.***" My eyes widened... That's Four? His body was mangled, with a massive pool of blood on the floor. Cuts and scars were all over his legs and arms, and his face was crushed.. His yellow bow was ripped, and blood dripped down from his face and chest.. What did.. What did HE DO TO HIM?! I gasped, as I felt myself fall back....

I think I fainted. I couldn't tell... But the next thing I know I woke up with Bracelety, Liy, and Pencil looking down at me. "...You okay? You suffered a pretty hard fall.." Liy asked, lifting me up. I rubbed my head. "Y-Yeah.. I'm alright.." I realized we weren't in the gym. We were... In someone's room? The walls were a light sky blue, and the floor were carpeted with a deep blood red color. Around the room were mostly plain... "Yay! Can we start our meeting now??" Bracelety grinned, as Pencil nodded. "Of course, of course..." Pencil went to sit up on the bed as the other two gathered around her.. I followed Bracelety and Liy, as Pencil looked down at us.

"Welcome girls! We're going to start a new club.. For us.. Girls!" She smiled. "Every week, or 7 days.. We'll meet in my room, or Liy's room for a gathering. We'll talk about what we know about ourselves and our interests. It's a way to strengthen a bond, and trust. Sound good?" I mean.. I already knew I could trust Pencil, but getting to know Liy and Bracelety sounded nice.. "Mhm~!" Liy nodded slowly, while Bracelety loudly cheered. I covered my ears, giving a thumbsup. Pencil smiled. "Alright.. I think Liy had some boardgames.. We could play some games to get to know a bit more about eachother!" So we did.

We basically played one of those introduction games, and we got to know more about eachother's talents and stuff... Liy's still a mystery..

I feel like she's hiding something but.... She doesn't rememeber her talent.. She has a unsettling vibe, but I don't know if that'd be considered a red flag in these difficult times. I decided to brush it off, and at 9 PM, we left Liy's room and went to our own individual rooms.. I stayed up all night, reading the nature-related books offered to us, and watered the plants in my room. I'm glad I got to know more about some people.. And the fate of our former headmaster. But where are the rest of the facility members? Like.. According to the journalist report I read before entering the school.... The numbers were facility members, same as a few other people.. Where's Two? Three? Five? Six... What happened to Six?? Why did they become so evil?

Slowly, I moved over to my bed, laying on it as I questioned what had happened to this school... Why was Six.. Or whom we now call Monoroku, done this... Is there a motive to this..? I drifted off.... The questions flooding my mind. The biggest one was....

Where is X.

[1] Chaos..

...I was running. In the outside world, with friends like... Firey... Coiny... Pin.... Needle... We were having fun, playing tag and chasing eachother like the young kids we were, we used to be so happy.. Suddenly, I felt the ground below me shake, and open as I fell... Fell into a void of nothing.

I woke up.

Oh... It was just a dream.. Hahah... I should've known. I looked down at my hands. They were shaking.. Why were they shaking? I laughed it off. No. Not now. We just got here! We have friends.. Even if it isn't Needle, Coiny, Pin, or Firey... Instead.. I have his younger brother. And.. I.... I don't want to think about it. I had a terrible feeling in my guts as I got upstairs to head for the supposed dining hall. I checked the clock, it was 7:05 AM. I was a little late. I didn't have breakfast the other day, nor mention it because... I just..I just couldn't. Ever since the killing game was announced to me, I had a terrible feeling.

What if I kill someone? What if someone kills me? How will I ever survive? Who could I possibly trust?

I'm.. going to ignore the feeling. I walked into the dining hall, where everyone else was, like usual. I sat down, as I began to chew on my food... Everyone seemed to be really happy and maybe today would be a nice day for my thoughts to be clear and to spend time with some of the others. Well, that was until Monoroku showed up again. What did they want this time..?
"Hello students! You all seem well wih your meals, hm?" He had his hands behind his back, looking at every one of us with a smug grin. "You all seem really cozy.. But, that isn't going to happen when I'm here! So, I'm going to... Give you a *motive!*" He cheered, making anyone who was talking earlier, silent. We.. We were all confused.

Motive?

What.. What's that for? "Meet me in the Gymnasium at 9 AM Sharp! It's very important~" He smiled, before suddenly disappearing.. What was left was a small piece of paper with the number 6 written on it. How odd... I was terrified though, and everyone else seemed to be aswell. "MOTIVE?! WHAT THE FUCK IS THE PURPOSE OF THIS DAMN 'MOTIVE'?!" Firey Jr growled, slamming his hands on the table as he got up out of frustration. "I'm done eating!" He left the dining hall. Everyone else was confused, mumbling to themselves. "..I guess we should head there...." Dora mumbled, as she began to get up with David to leave to the gym. I looked at everyone else, as each of them slowly got up and followed the duo. Including me. Well...

Eventually, all 16 of us stood there. The gymnasium. It was 8:59 AM. It was nearly time, and I was mumbling and fidgeting to myself when someone tapped my shoulder. I turned around to find it being Pencil. "Oh, hey Pencil!" I smiled, trying to make some light conversation. Pencil smiled, giving me a small wave. "Hey. What do you think Monoroku meant by motive?" She asked. I got quiet. I didn't.. Want to know. "..I don't know!" I responded weakly, trying to give the most optimistic and happy smile I could. It was hard to... Just the thought... Well. We'd find out now. Suddenly, Monoroku appeared at the pedastel again, with a microphone in his hand. "Greetings students! I'm glad you've all come, it's such an honor as your new headmaster, or host, to give you your very first motive of this killing game!" He had a big grin, giving me the creeps.

"Infront of this very stage is a small cardboard box, containing photographs of a person OR multiple people that is valuable to one of the students here... Take the photograph with your name written on it, and that's the person..." He paused, turning around and giving a undeniable giggle as he grabbed his fedora and held it up.

"I'll ***KILL*** if one of you idiots don't kill someone in *two days*! Now, have fun killing! The time's ticking." He growled, before disappearing. Everyone was silent... Oh no.. A motive... To kill one of us... I can't believe this.. I covered my mouth, as everyone began to slowly walk to the cardboard and take out their photographs. I hesitantly took mine... It had Leafy written in cursive on the back, and as I turned it over.... I nearly dropped it for the world to see. My eyes were filled with tears as I saw who it was.. My childhood best

friend...

Pin.

I couldn't believe this. If... If not one of us kills in 2 days.. She's gone. Dead. No longer living. I didn't know what to say..... I really hoped one of us wouldn't.. But.. I don't know how I'd react to Pin just.. being gone. For good. I looked up to everyone, and they all were unhappy. Most of them had quickly left at the view of seeing their photographs.. Like Stapy, Bracelety, David, Dora, and Loser... I hope they're alright...

I slowly left the gym. I didn't know what to say.

--

HEHEHEH FIRST MOTIVE EH? LETS SEE HOW THIS PLAYS OUT

[1] Please don't die.

I worriedly walked out of the gym, looking around with shaky hands. A motive.. To kill... It really made me realize what sortof situtation we were in. I continued to walk down the halls, my mind blurry as I tried to ignore everyone.. I heard chattering.. I didn't know if it was about me or not, but I didn't listen in. I wanted Pencil.. Or Liy.. Either one of them would've helped. They're like my best friends right now, and who I could just call family at this point. My mind went to a blur as I continued to walk down the halls, shaking.. Just knowing anybody at any point could attack me and kill me. I don't want that to happen...

I suddenly screamed as I felt someone tap my shoulder, turning around to see it to be Pencil. She was a bit taller than me, so I just fell to my knees, hugging her as my head laid on her chest. "P-Pencil-!" I cried out, letting out my tears.. I was happy.. She isn't dead. Yet. I don't want to die.. Nor do I want she. Or anyone.. I cared for them all... I really did, and I'm just afraid. I hummed in happiness as Pencil gently patted my head.

"Oh, hey Leafy. What's up?"

"I-It's been good.. I'm just so glad to see you!"

"...Huh? How come?" Pencil seemed a bit confused, tilting her head as I looked up to her face. I tried to give a smile.. But it was just so difficult. "..T-This whole killing game scares me Pencil.. It really does. I just want us to be safe."

"...Oh. Leafy... I'm sure we'll be okay. We'll be strong, together. Right?" She nudged me a bit as I parted from the hug, taking deep breaths to calm down. I don't want Pin to go.. I really didn't. But.. I didn't want anyone. Even Roboty to go. All of them mean everything, even if we did just meet or if we've known eachother for a bit.

I don't want anyone to suffer.

I really didn't.

I felt something creep up my spine, but I decided to ignore it... Pencil noticed me feeling a bit off, probably from my expression. "Hey, want to go and walk around the halls with me? Maybe it could calm you down or something.." She asked, holding my hand as she did. I softly blushed.. The feeling of being comforted in such a rough time really did feel nice. "..Y-Yeah. That would help. A lot." I replied as she began to walk in a random direction where one of the halls would be. We passed the locked door and took a turn as we were going in the direction of where our rooms are.

We looked around, talking about stuff like where we came from... I got to know more about Pencil. She was from a girls only prep school, never really talking to boys and was always told by her friends that boys were weird and disgusting.... That's... a terrible way to thing of people, but I didn't judge. She met Match from there, and from the looks of the two during the fight.. They did look like they were silently judging based on.. them. Not the agrument.. I guess that did explain something. I told Pencil more about my world, where Pin is my best friend, and Firey is my.. uh... Not crush.

..I don't talk about what happened that night.

Pencil patted my shoulder, in pity as she heard me trail off once I got to discussing about Firey. Well.. His brother was attending this school, so I'd have to get over it. "..It's fine. I'm... kindof over the whole thing, but you seem to have really nice friends! Maybe once we get out, we could meet them?" I suggested, grinning excitedly. Pencil shrugged. "...Maybe, I mean, you aren't a boy for starters..." We giggled a bit. "Yeah, yeah. That'd be great! Let's all get out of here.. I know none of us would really kill eachother. R-Right..?"

"..I doubt."
That was comforting to hear. It really was... I went in for another hug, blushing a bit as I did.. I don't know why I'm blushing im not gay please

"Alright.. Come on, it's sortof getting late. We might have to part.. I

don't think we're allowed to sleep together." Pencil calmly said, pushing me off gently.. I parted, looking at her with a nod. It was.. 9 PM... I walked over to my door, looking back at Pencil and waving before I went to bed.

--

i might not be here tomorrow. this is a vent-ish chapter.

i just wanted to say ily and please have a good life if not today or tomorrow. If I don't update by next month, than i'm not here. i'm not alive.

[1] Garden of Hope..?

Morning.

I got up and out of bed, looking around... I was safe and alive, like a regular everyday morning. I went to braekfast, ate, than left. It was time for me to explore the place and get to know my surroundings. I never really checked that many rooms, besides the one I woke up in.. That day was scary, and I wish it was never there. Well.. There's two more days until Pin's dead. My best friend. There's the risk of someone being dead today. A high one. I just hope it isn't me... I decided to go down a hall I hadn't quite entered yet, with curiousity.. It used to be blocked off, I just didn't mention it because it didn't seem that important until now. Most of them were simple things, like office desks in each room and such. It seemed like the hallway where the staff would be, except... There were no staff. The only 2 staff members we have seen is Monoroku, and Four... Four's dead... And Monoroku went insane.

I'm terrified to know the fates of the other teachers.

I continued to walk down the halls, to soon find a door with a interesting label on it. Unlike the other rooms, that were labelled with your sterotypical names of the teachers... This had a leaf printed on it. I tilted my head in curiousity.. Was this for me? I moved my hand slowly onto the doorknob, twisting it slowly and unlocking it. I was shaking, as I pushed forward to see what it was. The whole time, I was confused, asking multiple questions and terrified to see what was behind the door. It could've been anything.. A trap.. Monoroku... Anything. But.. Instead...

What I saw was much more different than I expected.

Stapy and Spongy were there, seeming to have already found the hallway and room before me. What was it..? I looked around in confusion, seeing what looked to be light shining in..? Huh..? After

my vision got used to all of the sudden light, I soon realized what it was.

A garden.

What? Why is there a garden here..? It seemed to be growing various flowers.. It was really so beautiful, and my eyes widened with joy. I mean, after all, I am the Ultimate Botanist! "..Wow...." Was all I could let out, as the two turned over to me. They seemed to had finally noticed me. "Hey, thought you'd be amazed at this." Stapy grinned. "The flowers look nice, don't they? They look like the perfect ones to be added to a grave.." He muttered, as he ran his hand through the soil of the plants. I wasn't sure, about that... But, he's the expert in that sorta stuff! Spongy rolled his eyes. "I'm just visiting." He decided to walk back, shoving me to the side as he did. I didn't really like that, but I didn't judge. "So, you're interested in flowers too??" I looked at Stapy as I asked, wondering why he was so interested... Besides the whole grave thing. "Mm.. Yeah, my friend Foldy loved to use them to create flowercrowns for herself." He explained, before getting up. "Hey, maybe when I get out I could give some of these to her... But they need to be tended properly, because she only likes specific ones." I jumped up and down excitedly.

"Which ones does she like? I could possibly help tend them!" I REALLY loved tending and helping others with their garden! I mostly love growing flowers, so this seemed like the perfect chance of doing what I love! "..Well, she likes buttercups, bluebells, and pansys the most... And we have some buttercups here to grow." Stapy responded, as he got up and began to move over to a small area where the buttercups were being grown.

"So, we could possibly grow these until we're finally let out of this stupid place. Assuming that none of us go insane and tries to kill another person that is." He left out a little laugh before getting up. "I'm sure that'd never happen.." He bit his lip nervously.. He seemed to doubt what he just said, which... I hope so too. But that's that slim chance someone might.

Well... It depends on who everyone else got. I should probably ask.... I looked back at Stapy, smiling and waving. "I gotta go." I said, before running off... I didn't know what Stapy responded with, but I didn't

care right now.

I ran with full speed, trying to find Pencil again... We're best friends, if you can't tell! Well... As I ran, I accidentally bumped into someone, falling back suddenly with a small oof. Everything was dizzy.. I looked forward, to see who it was.. *Firey Jr.* He groaned in pain, looking down at the floor before getting up and seeing me. "W-Wait.. It's YOU-" He growled angrily. He wasn't happy to see me again... And to be truthfully honest, I wasn't very happy to see him either.. "I knew I recongized you as soon as I damn saw you.." He walked up to me, with a death glare. "You're the girl who won't stop bothering my brother!"

well... crap.

"W-What-!? N-No..? We're just friends.." I tried to defend myself, getting up. "'Friends?' My bro told me all about your annoying ass. And honestly, I might as well kill you now because my brother is going to die in 2 FUCKING DAYS if I don't do anything about it!" Wait. What-

I was suddenly pushed back down, staring up at the small guy with shock. What was going on?! I felt myself freeze up, out of fear. He had his hand balled into a fist as he was about to give me a huge punch.. But.. He hesitated, his body shaking a bit as he looked down at me with an angry expression. "L-Look, if you FUCK with me A-AGAIN- I will KILL you, YOU HEAR ME?!" He shouted, tears falling down his face as he did. He seemed really nervous... For someone giving a death threat, that is. "..Fuck off." He muttered, kicking me in the legs before walking off in the opposite direction.. He left me there, in short confusion as I tried to piece together what happened.

I was quiet as I got up, deciding to leave the area out of being nervous.. I don't know why he did that... I really didn't. I was terrified. Just the thought of dying scared me, even if it was for just saving someone close to the murderer.. I rubbed my eyes, trying to force myself to stop crying. It seemed like Firey honestly didn't like me. Mostly because of how his brother treats me. I hope I could just see him and talk to him for one last time...

I wished we didn't have to go through with this game of life and

death.

I just hope nobody dies....

I really do.

[1] The Photographs.

I was walking away from the hallway where Firey Jr confronted me. I was afraid. What would've happened if nobody did kill?? Would it be my fault that my... ex-boyfriend.. Would it be my fault that he's dead? I don't know.. He really did make it sound like my fault. I looked up at the clock nearby, reading it as 8PM. I bit my lip, as I had 2 more hours before I had to go to bed. Enough time to interact with the others. I smiled, as I saw Dora and David down at the hall. They both were nice the last time we interacted, even if David wasn't the most friendly towards me.

I walked up to them. "Hey guys!" I exclaimed with an eager smile, as Dora faced me and waved. "Oh, hello Leafy." She said, looking at me as she nudged David a bit. All he did was give me a glare and look away out of anger. Rude... "How have you been?" I asked, with a smile. "..I've been alright." Dora responded, shuffling her purple backpack a bit. She looked at David, before looking back at me with a sigh. "David's been alright too. He's just.. really upset over this whole murder for someone else to live idea." Huh..? Oh..

"Oh! If I could ask.. Who did you two have as your.. person?" I awkwardly said, it probably came out wrong... I felt bad, really bad. "I-I mean-! If you're comfortable." I quickly added, hoping to reassure them. "Oh. Me? Uhm.." She shuffled through her bag before taking out a small photograph of a girl with a pink scarf wrapped around her neck. Her hair was grey, tied up in a ponytail with a jagged look to it. She wore a long sleeve grey shirt, with a pink skirt and knee-long white socks. I gazed at her for a few more seconds before looking back up to Dora. "This is Saw. She's the person Monoroku intends on killing if one of us don't kill in a day, now." She firmly stated, gripping the photograph tightly before putting it away. Saw? What a nice name... "O-Oh- You two must be close than.. Huh..?" Dora nodded slowly, while David made a low growl at that statement. "What about you, David?" I looked at him.

"It's none of your business." He hissed, as he held his wrist angrily. Looking at me. Dora glanced at David with worry. "He hadn't told me who he had either.." She mumbled, before I walked up to David. "Well, why not find out?" I quickly snatched the photograph from David, pushing him back as he tried to fight back. "H-HEY- THAT'S MINE-!" He screamed out of anger. I stuck my tongue out, before looking at it. Who it was... Surprised me.

It was *Dora*.

But... It wasn't what she looked like now. It was a much younger dora, her hair short and down.. Like a football shaped hair. I don't know how to explain it, but it looked like a photograph of her when she was about... 8? 9? Sitting in a small open patch in the forest, admiring the natural surroundings around her. It hurt me inside.. Just to know her brother cared for her so much that she was the one that would've been harmed if we didn't... kill someone else.
Either way... One of us would die. Dora or not.

Before I could say anything, David quickly took it out of my hands. He was embarassed, quickly stuffing it in his jacket pocket and staring at me. He was on the verge of tears, rubbing his eyes. He looked away, turning around and walking off out of anger. Dora looked at me. 'Who was it?' She mouthed worriedly. I didn't want to say, shrugging. Dora didn't question, soon turning in the opposite direction to catch up with David. I admired how much David cared for her.. But why would he hide that from her? Is it to protect her?

It worried me.. But I decided to not think much of it and continue wandering the halls on my own. It was now 8:30PM. According to the clocks it was, atleast. I bit my lip, looking around. Everyone seemed to had found their own room to comfortably relax in, as I hardly saw anyone in the hallways this time around. Who was in the hallways, though, was Roboty. We didn't have such nice encounters the last two times.. But I felt bad! I wanted to help him!

I decided to talk to him, walking up to him. "Hi Roboty! It's nice to see you again." I smiled, hugging him. Roboty rolled his eyes, pushing me off of him quickly. "Yeah, yeah. Whatever. What do you want." He didn't apperciate my help! Or my comfort! From what it looks like, atleast. "Oh! Nothing, I just wanted to talk to someone!" I

smiled. Before fidgeting with my fingers. "...So... Uhm.. Who's the person you got for the motive?" I nervously said, laughing a bit when I said so. Roboty gave me a deadpan look, not impressed with my attempts. He rolled his eyes, soon shuffling through his pockets to take out a small photograph. I looked at it, eyes widening as I instantly recongized who it was.

It was Woody. The small fragile boy who was in my school, before he moved away. His hair was all messy with a small green band-aid right on his left cheek. He looked to be hiding in a corner of a room, shaking as he looked at the camera with fear. I always rememebered his fear of everything. I felt bad.. I did want to help him conquer his fears! But, I usually didn't bother him. I didn't hate him that much either! Unlike my friend, Pin.. She always hated talking or even seeing him! I don't mind.. It's their opinions after all. He was wearing a dark orange turtleneck sweater with green patches all over, and light blue pants. "..Oh-" Roboty took the photo back. "Now show me who's your... friend." He growled. Ah, so an exchange! I nodded, before grabbing the photo and showing him Pin. "This is my friend! Pin!" I smiled.

Roboty raised his eyebrow, as he put the photo back in his pocket and examined it. I smiled as I held it up before putting it away aswell. "Well, it was nice chatting with you! I hope we can talk more soon!" I giggled, before running off. That was great.. Well, I think I talked to enough people for today.. It was 9PM anyways, so I better get to bed. I swiftly walked for my room, turning in for the night.

1 more day until Pin's gone. Or someone else in this very school is.

[1] ....Oh no.

I woke up. Another day. I rubbed my eyes tiredly as I got my bag. I decided to sleep in the same clothes as yesterday, and skip brushing my teeth and fixing up my hair for breakfast. It was 9AM, and everyone probably ate already. I quickly rushed into the cafeteria and ate cereal before heading to the room where the garden was. Stapy was already there, digging up some plants and planting new ones in. He seemed to be really happy, and looked at me. "Oh, hey Leafy. I'm just planting in some of the new plants left in the pots." He gestured to the dug up dirt holes and the plants beside him. He planted another flower before getting up and smiling at me. "So, what do you think of these? I mean, you ARE the Ultimate Botanist.." He showed me a small bouquet of buttercups, and shook them around.

With interest, I took the flowers and examined it. It seemed to have been growing for quite awhile, and was in good quality. I smiled. "It looks great! I'm sure Foldy will love it!" I smiled. Stapy was glad to hear that, telling from the look on his face as he adjusted his belt. "That's good to hear." He said as picked up a shovel from nearby. "I gotta go plant a lot more of these buttercups." He glanced at the fairly big pile, before giving me a toothy grin.

I nodded. I thought about leaving him be, as he seemed happy with working on it with his own. "Well, I'm going to go now. It was nice talking to you!" I waved, running off to find Pencil. I hadn't seen her in awhile...

I walked down the hallways, looking around as I see very few student coming and going. Like.. I saw Roboty pass by me and purposely bump into me, Spongy walking down from where I came from, and Loser sitting against one of the hallways. It was a normal day, and everyone seemed to have found their favorite spot in the school. Besides some of us, like me! I kindof like exploring the place and getting to talk to many people but- I'm getting off topic. I'm getting

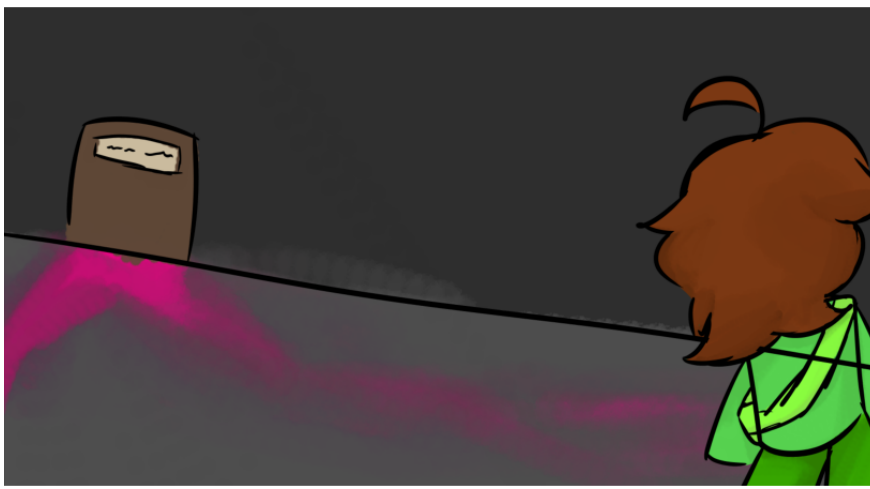
more nervous each step, trying to look around for her. Where is she...? She usually would be in the hallways. I paused for a minute. Wait... I should probably ask some people if they've seen her. I barged into the room next to where I was, to find 8-Ball sitting in one of the desks talking to himself.

I casually tried to backed away, closing the door. Before I heard something. "Huh-?" I quickly looked at 8-Ball. He was looking at me in confusion, getting up in embarassment. "Oh my pool- H-How much did you hear...?" He tried to adjust his beanie, and he looked like he wanted to hide himself in his hands, but he still faced me with a deadpan look. I shrugged. "Not much. Uhm.. I was going to ask something but you seem busy! igottagonowby-" Before I can run for it, 8-Ball quickly went up to me and placed his hand on my arm. "Hey. I'm not busy. What were you going to ask?" He said it so threatening I was really intimidated-

"H-Have you seen Pencil-?" I took a step back away from him, waiting for an answer. 8-Ball paused, glancing to the side. He seemed lost in thought. In about.. 8 minutes later, he looked back at me. "No. I haven't seen her. Sorry." He simply said, before closing the door. I bit my lip nervously, before going to the dorm hallways to try to knock on her room... I'm terrified. Oh no.. What if she was dead!? I knocked on the door frantically, shaking a bit. Where was she...? Wait huh- I glanced at the door next to Pencil's. *Match's.* Something weird seemed to be coming out of her room.. Like a weird... liquid.

Wait.. IS THAT BLOOD!? Okay. NOW I'M SCARED. I looked around, and there seemed to be nobody there. I didn't know what to do. I checked the clock. I've been trying to find Pencil for 3 hours now, and no luck. Maybe Match killed Pencil! I don't know! But.. The blood seemed dried up. I decided to follow the trail, with a shaky body. Oh no oh no oh no... Did somebody actually kill?! I hope not I really do.. I mean losing Pin is terrible but.. Losing somebody in this school and actually having to see the corpse? That sounds horrible...

I kept on walking, as I noticed the trail becoming a lot more thin.. Until I looked up.. *The Janitor's Closet.* ...It's fresh. I noticed a bit of Blood leaking out, but than another trail of blood. I don't know where it goes to.. But it seemed a lot more fresh than the one I was following. My hands were shaking.



I decided to get closer.. To open that door. I didn't know how to feel.. Buti t felt like I just.. had to open that door, to see what was behind it. I gulped, holding my breath as I moved my hand on the doorknob. I was really hesitant, and I sure wasn't damn ready to see what was behind the door. I closed my eyes, slowly turning the knob and opening it. As the door swung open, I slowly stood there. My eyes still closed in a black endless void. I was too scared. I was too scared

to open it and see what was behind the door. But.. I was too curious. I smelled something horrible. As soon as I opened my eyes.. What I saw was something that made me pass out.. Except.. It didn't.

Spongy's dead body lay there, his eyes closed as his goggles were cracked and were covering his face as blood dripped down his head and hands. His eyes were closed and had a massive frown on his face. Both of his sleeves were covering his hands, and blood coated one of the ends of the sleeves entirely.

The next thing I knew. I screamed, falling on my knees. Somebody actually killed. This is the first death... Out of.. most likely.. many.

[1] Who did it?

The next thing I knew, Pencil and Match were running over. "Like huh?! We like, heard you scream, what like happened?!" Match said, looking at me nervously. I turned around to face them. Getting up before pointing inside. They quickly saw the body, and reacted.. Pencil looked away with slight embarassment while Match tunred around to nearly puke. "Oh no.." She bit her lip, before looking at me. Suddenly.. Our PDA's began to ring, and I took mine out.. It soon booted up, and Monoroku soon flashed on it, with a unnerving announcement to I assume everyone. "A body has been discovered!" He openly announced with a sinister grin.

"Now, after some time passes.. Which, you may use for anything! A class trial will be held. You all must report into the trial room ASAP as soon as you hear my announcement, if not.. You'll be... Let's say, PUNISHED!" He laughed insanely, before the PDAs turned off. Match and Pencil stared at their PDAs, before looking up. "Oh nononoono- How are we going to tell everyone?!" Match was panicking, jumping with fear. Or.. Was it excitement. I couldn't tell.. Well, as soon as she said that, another group of students approached us. Those 3 were Loser, 8-Ball, and Balloony with worried faces. "We saw the announcement and noticed the blood trail from Match's room. Did you guys find the bodies?" 8-Ball started, trying to look past us at the janitor's closet with worry. Pencil nodded. "Yeah.... Look for yourself." She pushed me and Match gently to the side to let the three see. Loser flinched, biting his lip and looking away with tears. 8-Ball grimaced, and Balloony decided it was better off running and telling everyone else.

A few minutes later, all of the other students gathered at the body. "Ew.. What the hell?!" Firey Jr started, biting his lip. "I-I s-should've guessed someone would've killed.." Dora nervously said, fidgeting with her fingers. I looked at everyone else, they all had mixed reactions.. But they all were upset. Seeing a fellow classmate dead...

It hurt.

It hurt so much.. Even if... We didn't have the best friendship while he was still alive.. I felt pity, and grief for his death. "Right... Well, knowing how detectives work.. We need to get evidence and explore the crime scene to figure out who's behind the murder." Loser said. "Everyone should split up, and we can meet back in the class trial room.. Wherever that is.. To discuss what we got. Okay?" He seemed to experienced.. It put me on edge, but I decided to not question it and nod. I looked at Pencil and Match. "I know the perfect place we can start." I pointed at the secondary blood trail. The more fresh one..

"S-Sounds good-!" Match chirped, trying to make the mood atleast somewhat more positive. And wow, did she fail. "Right." Pencil took lead, following the trail as the both of us followed. We were quiet for the walk, but I had a feeling we were all wondering.. Who killed Spongy? I looked up ahead. Realizing where the trail came from.

The Garden.

"It ends there!" Pencil said, as she walked into the garden. In it had a huge spot right in the middle of the room, a blood pool.. I wanted to faint at the sight, but stayed strong. I looked around.. All of the buttercups were planted, each of them neatly aligned. But... Within the flowers was one thing that terrified me. What the hell??

I stared at the dirt patch near the neatly placed up shovel. It was a *hand.* A bloodied hand.. Just chopped fresh stuck into the dirt. I was shaking, pointing my finger at it as the other two began to notice. Match winced at the sight. "..Eww.. Do you think that's.. S-Spongy's??" Pencil shrugged, walking up to the hand. She went down on one knee to pull it out of the dirt, quickly dropping it. "..It's severed. It looks like Spongy's. We need to check the body." She immediately stated. I wanted to puke.. WHO WOULD CHOP OFF A HAND?! I glanced at the shovel again. Something's wrong. At the end of the shovel...

Was blood.

...Oh. So... Someone severed Spongy's hand using a shovel. Alright.. I looked at Pencil and Match with worry, Match was clearly panicking,

while Pencil grabbed my hand. "We gotta check the janitor's closet again. Come on." Pencil began to walk off, and I was forced to follow her. We left Match behind, as she clearly didn't feel good about this whole investigation thing.... I knew I should probably check her room next. She might be the murderer... I mean.. There was a blood trail coming from her room. We kept on walking. Everyone was a suspect. Even me.. Well, I knew I didn't kill Spongy. I only saw him once! I assumed that Spongy was killed during the timeframe that I was searching for Pencil. Which is about 3 hours.. But I saw Spongy about 1 hour in. So 2 hours to kill him.

Pencil went up to the janitor's closet again. Nearby was a distressed Stapy. Firey Jr was comforting him, glaring at the body. And me.. He must think I killed him! I was concerned, but we walked up to Spongy's body. I winced, as I began to move my hand down his sleeves. I felt one hand.. But the other.. I didn't feel any sign of a hand. I looked at Pencil as I did. She must've noticed my change of expression, because she grabbed his left hand and began to unroll the sleeves.. To find it all bloodied. The hand was gone, though. And fresh blood was still leaking out.

"Ech... Yeah.. That's Spongy's hand alright." She muttered, as she looked at me. "Yeah... Atleast it isn't someone else's hand!" I was trying to cheer up the mood, atleast think somewhat positively. It was REALLY hard though.. "Though, we should search Match's room because the trail I followed came from her room." I said, pointing at the other path. Pencil nodded, as we walked down the hallway. Everyone else seemed to be doing their own seperate things, likely looking. Once we arrived in the room hallways, we noticed Match's door was already opened.

Some people must've gotten the same idea.. Inside we found Liy, Loser, David, and Match. Match was on the bed as Loser comforted her, while Liy and David were searching the rooms. The place was full of clothes, and it was glittery and stuff. "No.. There seems to be nothing incriminating besides the bloody trail coming from her room.." Liy mumbled as she lifted up one of the dresses, that I assumed Match designed. Pencil quickly went to help Loser comfort Match, while I decided to speak to David and Liy.

"I don't think it's her. It seems too obvious.." He muttered, crossing

his arms and glancing to the side. "Yeah.. The last I saw Spongy was when he was going down one of the hallways, coming from HIS room. He never came to eat breakfast this morning.. Actually, not many of us.. Like you!" Liy pointed at me. "Where were you during breakfast?!" I sweated. "I-I just overslept! I went to quickly eat breakfast, tend the garden a bit, than go and find Pencil.. I found the body while searching for her!" I claimed, well.. It was true! "Right. Well.. The people who didn't go to breakfast is.. Pencil, Stapy, Match, Ruby, Leafy, Spongy, Roboty, and Firey Jr." She said. "Those 7 are likely our suspects, as Spongy is one of the few who missed breakfast, and died." David nodded. "Yeah.. We need some alibis from them."

"Well, you got mine! Anyways.. I'm gonna go, and let you do your thing!" I smiled, quickly backing up to keep investigating the hallways and talk to others.

This is really scary.. I just really hope Pencil or Match isn't the one behind this.
I wish nobody died.
I really did.

--
Author Zapz here!
I just wanted to say.. THANK YOU SO MUCH FOR 1K+ READS!! It feels like such a big honor and the amount of reads each chapter gets amaze me! I really hope you all enjoy the chapters to come, because making this seem interesting sure is hard! Haha.

Also! Who do you think killed Spongy? <3

[1] First Case.

After backing out, I fell back and bumped into Gelatin. "Oh hey Leafster! What you been up to?" He shot fingerguns to me as tried to keep balance. "I've been trying to get to the bottom of this whole murder thing, you?" I quickly said, adjusting my bag as he playfully messed with his bow. "Ohhh, nothing~" He playfully teased, before helping me keep balance. "I've just been playing 'round! Goofin' off, that's all." He slapped my back. "Anyways, I gotta get going. Talk to ya later Leafster!" He skipped off, leaving me there. I didn't know what to say. I paused for a few more minutes until my PDA began to boot up. I took it out of my bag.

Monoroku was back on the screen. "Alright students! Time's up!" They snickered, waving. "Now, all you gotta do, is head into the trial room. Where our first class trial will be held! I will explain the rules once all 15 students arrive. So, be on time! Ta-ta~" The screen turned off after the short announcement. Well... I guess it's time to go. We have a lot to discuss... And this is only the first murder! Who knows who else might kill in the future... I was shaking, the fact that people in this very school killing their fellow classmates seemed impossible. But.. Spongy's death proved that this wasn't true. It was possible. And now, we, as the rest of the class, have to decide which one of us killed him... I couldn't believe it. I wished it was a dream but it wasn't...

I walked for the trial room, which I noticed instantly. The room that was taped from the beginning, and had been.. Was opened. I noticed some of the others going there, so I assumed this was it. It was time to begin the trial. It was time to decide who killed Spongy. Well... I stared at the trial room. It was 17 podiums in a circle, each had a name of one of the students of this school. In-between Balloony and Ruby's was Spongy's. A image of him smiling, with an bloody pink X crossed over it.. I think it was real blood. But I didn't want to know. My name was sat between Pencil and Bracelety's, and Pencil was

already there. I went to take my spot, waiting as everyone else went to their podium. Soon, everyone was at their proper spot. Standing there. Waiting for instructions. Gelatin glanced at the empty podium next to him, expecting something to happen in that very spot.. But instead, he was spooked to have Monoroku suddenly appear in his own judge's bench. He held a gavel in his hand and had a sinister girn. "Greetings students! To your very first.. Class trial!" Everyone faced him by now. Including me.

"Let me explain the rules. One of you murdered poor Spongy, by blood loss! They are the blackened, and you need to find out who it is. If you do~ The blackened will be punished! But.. If you fail.. Let's just say.. Everyone but the blackened will be punished, and the blackened will go on to graduate and to go back out free in the world! Now.. Have fun, and may the first trial begin!" He hit the gavel down, and that rang through us. It was time.

-- WHO KILLED **SPONGY** ? --

"..Well. I suppose we need to get this started. I'll start." Liy held onto the railings of the podium, looking at everyone else with a squint. "Spongy was murdered by one of us, correct?" She looked at Monoroku, for confirmation.
"Correct!"

"Right. After examining Spongy's body, I've hardly noticed any scars. He had no struggle at all, so he had to be attacked from some sort of surprise.."

"Like a stealth attack?" Firey Jr asked.

"Indeed. Now, there were two noticable wounds on his body. One was on his head.. And the other, was on one of his hands." Liy continued, explaining as everyone else listened in carefully. Gelatin was writing notes in his hand, and I knew what she meant by 'one of his hands.' So, I decided to speak up to add into the discussion.

"One of his hands were cut off, and the hand was in the garden! Stuck right fresh in the dirt."

"I-It was..?" Loser gasped, covering his mouth using his hand. "That

sounded horrible to go through.."

Match crossed her arms, huffing. "Y-Yeah- It was like all gross and disgusting! Though.. It like seemed to had been planted like recently." She looked like she was about to gag.

"Well, OBVIOUSLY we have some suspects here. We have Leafy and Match right now. There was blood coming right from her room!" David quickly spat, putting his hands on the railing and shooting a glare at both me and her.

"But wait." Pencil quickly interrupted. "Didn't you check Match's room? There was nothing incriminating inside besides a few sewing needles and the blood trail itself."

Roboty rolled his eyes. "And those sewing needles could be used to cut off Spongy's hand! Did you check the trash can?"

"NO!" I quickly shouted, looking at Roboty. That was definitely not true. "Actually, at the garden, we found something very important.." I looked at Match and Pencil to back me up.

Match knew what I meant, and went right on cue. "Right. A shovel with blood on it!"

"Jee, Leafy. You're making yourself awful suspicious..." 8-Ball muttered, looking away from everyone as he placed his hands in his pockets. "How could we assume that you aren't the so-called 'blackened?'"

"I don't think we should be assuming things right noww...." Balloony groaned.

Bracelety quickly jumped up, shouting with a lot of excitement, for our current situtation. "WELL! IF WE NEED TO GET SOME EVIDENCE, WE NEED TO FIGURE OUT WHEN THE MURDER WAS DONE!"

"Yeah! But to figure that out, we need to figure out where this murder was done." Ruby continued, raising a lot more questions for us to answer. She placed her hand on her chin as she was lost in thought.

"Well, that's easy! It was done in the garden. Despite there being two trails being led to Match's room and the garden, there was more incriminating evidence at the garden!" I pointed out. "So, Match shouldn't be suspected as the murderer of this case!"

"We shouldn't rule her out completely. She might've just obviously framed herself just to make herself seem more innocent!" Stapy shot back.

Dora sighed. "But didn't the more bloody trail lead to Match's room?"

"No! It led to the garden. Have you NOT been listening?!" Firey Jr shouted, making David shooting a look at him. Yikes..

"Guys, guys! Stop getting off topic! We need to know when the deed was done, so we can get proper alibis!" Gelatin quickly said, listening in to the discussion this entire time.

I knew. "Well, I noticed Spongy walking to the garden at around 10-11 AM. So it had to be around that time!" I pointed out. "So, if we get alibis during THOSE times, than we should be able to figure out who the murderer is!" I knew who to suspect... But, I need confirmation.

"I-I'll start. I was i-in the hallways during those times writing in my book! I-I saw Leafy and Spongy pass by..." Loser mumbled, fidgeting with his fingers as he looked at me for support.

"I can confirm that." I firmly said.

Stapy raised an eyebrow. "But how do we know it was around those times?" He asked. "I mean.. It could've been done earlier!"

"Well, Loser and Leafy both confirm that they've seen Spongy during those times. So it couldn't have been any earlier." Liy explained. "Nor any later, as the body announcement was given at around noon." She stated. "I don't think we can suspect Loser."

"R-Right. Erm.. Me and David were both talking in the hallways about our individual schools..." Dora said, with an awkward smile. "..Yeah.."

"I can confirm that." David pointed out. "I saw Firey Jr exploring the halls while we were talking. He seemed like he was heading for the kitchen. Was anyone there?"

Gelatin quickly raised his hand up excitedly. "Oooh! Oooh! I was during that time! I was making some delish food, when I saw the lil fella come in and try to check the fridge. Apparently, his favorite meal or whatever wasn't there! He threw a tiny fit there, and I was there to witness it all!" He giggled to himself, thinking of this as more of a joke.

Firey Jr was embarassed, growling at Gelatin before nodding. "Yes. I did that. Someone stole my soda!" He shouted angrily. "After this, WHOEVER STOLE MY SODA BETTER SPEAK UP." He spat, before going back to silence.

"Right...." Liy squinted at Jr. "So. We have Loser, Dora, David, Gelatin, Firey Jr, and Leafy's confirmed. We need some from everyone else. I can confirm myself, with Bracelety. She was annoying me about a certain group activity that some of my girls here are having for awhile." Bracelety nodded in agreement. "YEAH! WELL... NOT REALLY ANNOYING, MORE OF ASKING A LOT!"

"So... 8 out of the 15 of us have told our alibis." 8-Ball huffed. "I don't care for the number, but I could say that I was in one of the classrooms speaking to myself about that one small girl who's always trying to best me at everything. Until Leafy interrupted me, asking about Pencil or whatever." He plainly said.

"Yep! So that confirms 9 of us!" I smiled.

Ruby smiled. "Make that 12! Me, Pencil, and Match were all in a classroom together talking about our school! We went to the same school together yknow!" She smiled, raising her hands up to get attention on h- WAIT THAT WAS WHERE SHE WAS?!

"..Oh."

"Yeah, yeah.. Well. I was in the garden with Leafy at around 10, but I left to go get a snack at 11. By the time I came back, a murder already had happened!" Stapy claimed.

Balloony laughed nervously. "...I- Uh- I was just eating in the cafeteria!" He tried to say. Okay. That was suspicious.

"Wait! As suspicious as it sounds, I saw him eating there!" Firey Jr spoke up, before quieting down again. It was like he read my mind.....

"So that results in me having to say my final alibi." Roboty growled. "I was only checking out the halls for some people to bug. When Firey Jr finished his fit, apparently, I went to go annoy the hell out of him."

"...Which I didn't apperciate!"

Liy was thinking now. "...So.. All of us, have an alibis. One of us has to be lying, perhaps with an accomplice.." She said.

"HEY! HOW DO WE KNOW YOU DIDN'T KILL SPONGY AND BRACELETY'S ONLY BACKING YOU UP!?" David shouted, slamming his hands on the rails angrily. His whole ultimate debater really is starting to be clear now..

Loser looked at Liy, than David. "...Yeah. That could be a possibly..." He mumbled.

"...Well! Unlike all of your other claims, I actually have..." Liy smirked, looking through her pockets, before taking out some photographs. "Photographic Evidence of our playful interactions!" She revealed it, and hey, she really wasn't lying. "We intended on having our group activity with the girls be us taking fun photos of us having fun this week. That isn't suspicious whatsoever." She had a good defense.

8-Ball paused, looking down at the railing before gripping it with one hand. "Hey. Wait a minute. Something's wrong." He looked at everyone. "Firstly, someone appears to be missing.." He pointed at the one podium next to Gelatin and Pencil. "And, all of us... except one person, has their alibi defended by someone else." He pointed out.

"Well, like who?!" Match asked.

He smiled, before pointing right at Stapy. "Stapy." He sternly said,

"He claims to have gone to the kitchen, but unlike everyone else who's been there, nobody backed up the claim." He looked at Balloony, Gelatin, and Firey Jr. "Was he ever there?"

Gelatin quickly stopped being playful and happy, going to a empty and deadpan stare right at Stapy. "..No. I had never seen him in the kitchen, nor cafeteria. I was there the entire time." As I had suspected.. Stapy was the likely killer.

"W-WAIT-" Stapy interrupted. "I didn't get a snack from the kitchen-! I got it from the- uh- ROOM! I got it from my room!"

"Aww, sweetheart.." He had a big smug ass grin. "Food was never allowed in the rooms~" Gelatin peacefully said, oddly creepily..

Pencil glared at Stapy. "Get a snack? More like create incriminating evidence against Match! You didn't even do a good job!" She hissed.

"WAIT- I-"

"S-Stapy! I trusted you!" I covered my mouth, my eyes watering up. I couldn't believe it...

Stapy was growing more frustrated. "NO! I DIDN'T KILL HIM! STOP THINKING IT'S ME!!"

"You are TERRIBLE at hiding the fact you are. Just admit it! You killed Spongy." Liy spat back, pointing right at him. "You have too many flaws in your alibi!"

"B-But why would you like, frame me..?" Match was clearly hurt from this.

Stapy got angry. "BECAUSE YOU ALWAYS ARGUED WITH HIM-!" He realized what he said, covering his mouth. IT WAS HIM.

Pencil gasped, looking angrily at him. "So.. You DID kill him!"

"What if I did?! I rather not have Foldy DIE because none of your idiots would kill! I had to do the first move! I DIDN'T EVEN DO IT ON PURPOSE!" Stapy shouted, tears streaming down his eyes. He was trying to keep himself together, but he knew it was over. Wait...

I squinted at him. "On purpose? What do you mean?! Surely you would've done it on accident!"

"No-!" He shook his head. "Let me explain." He growled. "It's over for me, anyways."

"So, after you left. I was working on tending the garden. It was perfectly fine, right?! Well, apparently Spongy thought it was a good idea to come and go RIGHT BEHIND ME while I was using my shovel to dig a massive patch of dirt out! So. I hit him. Right in the face." He groaned. "I thought he was dead. I knew that Spongy was going to shittalk me if I left him alive anyways, so I cut off his hand and dug it in the dirt, just to be a little creative. Than set up my murder scene. It was hard with little old LEAFY HERE, wondering around!" He complained.

"..Y-You.. A-Actually killed him..? And cut off his arm..?" Loser was frozen in fear. The fact a murderer was in all of our presence.. It was shocking.

"YES! YES I FUCKING DID!" He slammed his hands on the rails. "I framed Match because I always saw her arguring with Spongy, and gossiping about him!" He shouted angrily, twitching a bit. "After I framed him, I left, and cleaned up the garden before going off and waiting for you guys to find the body! And guess where we are NOW." He said the last part through gritted teeth, clearly pissed with being caught.

"..R-Right.. Now, uhm.. Could we.. vote?" Dora quietly asked, looking at Monoroku. The entire time, he was grinning. "Oh? Alright than.. Everyone take out your PDA's, and vote who YOU think is the culprit!" He was snickering to himself, as everyone took it out.

I looked at my PDA, looking as all of the options.. All 16 students were on there, but Spongy's name was blacked out. I could even vote myself.. But.. It sounded dumb to, so I had to basically vote Stapy. He did just admit it to all of us. After a few minutes, the PDA booted off and I put it away. I looked at everyone else as they did the same.

Soon. A TV screen appeared where the entrance was. There was a wheel with objects relating to our name on it, and it spun.. Around

and around... It was nerve-wrecking, but after a few minutes.. It stopped. Right on a Stapler.
Stapy was found guilty.

-- **STAPY** HAS BEEN FOUND GUILTY . TIME FOR PUNISHMENT ! --

Suddenly, Stapy's podium disappeared into a hole. Making 8-Ball and David flinch out of surprise. They stared down as the hole filled itself

back up into a floor tile. The screen began to play, showing Stapy as he fell down into what looked to be a graveyard.. He got up, looking around in fear.

Everyone else watched, with shocked and worried expressions. What was going to happen to him? We all were terrified.. Even if he did kill one of us... He didn't deserve to go through this. We heard laughter, breaking out from Monoroku. Soon, the screen began to show something.. As Monoroku read along the lines of it.

It said..

DIGGING DOWN TO DESPAIR, ITS TIME TO GO SIX FEET UNDER!

Stapy was at a graveyard, with a shovel in hand as the gates opened to show various gravestones. With one of the graves opened with a hole infront of it. I couldn't tell what the gravestone said... But, soon, someone appeared.. The person was *Nine*.

They wore ragged clothes as they held various items in their hands. "...Could you possibly help me bury these?" They nervously asked, with a small smile. Stapy was shaking, looking around, but nodding. "S-Sure-" He hesitantly was given the first item. A purple marker, dried out. Stapy froze up, but hesitantly threw it down into the grave. The next one was a folded piece of paper, with a small smile drawn on it. Stapy held it, soon throwing it down into the grave. He was given another item. A stapler, and Stapy quickly threw it down aswell. He seemed to be doing good at this... That was until he was given the last item. Nine had it behind them for some reason, giving him in. "..Here. This is the last item." The camera suddenly shifted to infront of Stapy, coming from what appeared to be the grave. Stapy faced the gravestone, holding up the item. His eyes suddenly widened, as he swelled up in tears. He was hesitating to throw it down in the grave, shifting the photo so it could be showed to the stone instead of him. What was on the photo was him.. And 2 blurred out faces. They all seemed happy.. Stapy, a girl, and a boy.. I winced, as I noticed Nine do something.. They grabbed Stapy's shoulder, whispering something in Stapy's ear.

Before pushing him down into the grave. He screamed, as Nine quickly grabbed the shovel, showing a sad expression. The camera shifted back into the original position, and we saw Stapy.. Just.. laying there in the dirt. I soon realized what was happening.
He was being *buried alive*.
Everyone watched in tears, as Nine began to fill the grave with dirt, using powerful scoops from the shovel to cover it up and pat it. They

mumbled something to themself, before walking off.. We could hear Stapy. He was screaming for help, begging for someone to hear him... A few minutes passed... We couldn't hear him. Nobody could, as he was no longer breathing.

He was dead. He just got.. executed.

The screen shut off, as everyone stared at eachother with surprise... The risks just got much greater, and things weren't going to be as easy for now on.. We all knew that if we wanted to get out, we had to kill, and not get caught.. Or we would face the same fate Stapy had. Monoroku gave out a laugh. "Class Trial's over~!" He hit the gavel once again, before vanishing without a trace. What was left on the bench was a note. With the number six on it. Everyone was shocked, and the entire room was filled with silence. After what just happened to both Spongy and Stapy.. Nobody wanted to say a word. We were all filled with.. despair. It was terrible to see it. Both of them were gone, and now it was only 14 of us remaining.

Everyone slowly got up and out of their individual podium, slowly walking out of the courtroom with silence. Nobody wanted to say anything, and we all knew nobody would forget this very moment. The question was...

Who was the next to strike?

CHAPTER 1 | END.
14 OUT OF 16 REMAIN.

WOO THE FIRST 2 DEATHS!! WOW THIS WAS ACTUALLY REALLY FUN TO WRITE! I hope you guys enjoyed this case! Because wow, I've never written a chapter with 3000+ words.

Anyhow, I wonder.. Who do you think will kill, survive, or be a victim?? Just wanted to know <3

-Author Zapz

[2] It felt like reality..

Morning.

I got out of bed, my hands shaking. I swore it was all fake and part of my stupid imagination.. Spongy's death... The execution.. It felt so.. Fake.. Everything did.. But it sure felt real... I didn't want to think anymore, as I got out of bed and got dressed to head for the dining hall. Everyone was there, nobody said a word as they ate. It must've been real than. His death. Both of their deaths.. It was real. I couldn't believe it. Two of us just.. gone. I looked at everyone else, as they gave glances to eachother. I knew they were all wondering... Who would be the next to step out of line? Who would be the next to strike?

"Since nobody else will talk, I will." The small boy with a tanktop stood up on his chair, towering over everyone with a growl. "We need to talk about the food. Someone's been stealing all of it like it's nothing." He spat, putting his hands behind his back as he carefully watched everyone else.

"Jr, how do we know you didn't eat it all?" Ruby asked with curiousity, tilting her head as Jr shot a look at her. "I wouldn't. Someone ELSE at this very table is taking all of the food for themselves." He said. "But whom?"

"..Is this really that important? We have plenty of food." Pencil looked at Jr with a raised eyebrow. "But the culprit is taking all of my soda!" He whined, crossing his arms as he sat back down. "Just.. get it before they do." Pencil didn't seem to care, going back to eating her food before leaving with Match and Ruby. I felt a little hurt, but I decided to finish up my meal and go back to my room to rest. I was tired, and I was too conflicted on what happened yesterday. I was shaking, not knowing what to do.

Stapy was gone. Same as Spongy... I could've believe Stapy would

just.. do that! I trusted him.. And now, who knows who would die or kill next? I mean.. Even I could die! I was terrified, and I thought that taking a nap might be a good idea. I walked over to my bed, tucking under and falling asleep a few minutes later.. I dreamed about the class trial. Except..

I was the one being executed.
My body was shaking, as I felt vibes with thorns being tightened around me. I was shaking, looking around. Everything felt so weird.. My body was suspended high up the air, as I looked down to see the other students... Including Stapy.. Looking up at me with worried expressions. I tried to move around and squirm, but all I felt was pain on my wrists as the thorns dug deep into my skin. I cried out, trying to look through my bag for something.. I could move quite a bit, but every second I had, the thorns only dug deeper, and the vines only tightened around me. As I looked, I stared down, watching as everyone else witnessed me slowly dying. Everyone was upset, frowning, with tears in their eyes.... Everyone except Gelatin. I have no idea why.. But I eventually found a pocket knife in my bag. Where did THAT come from..? Tears fell down my eyes as I quickly knew what I had to do. I squirmed, lifting my hand with the knife up to my other hand as I began to slice through it. My hand was sliced in the process.. Just like Spongy's hand was cut up. I watched in fear as my hand fell to the floor. I was dangling from just merely one vine.. Being hung on by my remaining hand. I winced as I stared at the crowd. They were all whispering to eachother, besides Pencil. She wanted to step up, and go to me. To catch me once I fell... But I noticed something holding her back...

Match. She was whining, begging her to stay back just incase. I didn't know what to do.. But I didn't like how Match was acting. She hated me! I knew it... She wanted to steal our friendship and keep it to only her girl alliance! I growled, as I quickly dropped the knife and caught it with my mouth. I was shaking, as I used the knife in my mouth to cut off my arm... I felt pain, than numbing... I stared as I dropped down to the floor. Well I did.. But I underestimated how far of a drop it was, and as soon as I did....

I woke up.
I was breathing heavy, looking around. I was shaking... It was a bad

dream.. Just a dream.. But it felt so real.. As if it was another universe. I buried my head in my hands, crying.. I couldn't believe I would dream of something so terrible.. Match seemed to hate me! It felt so real.. MAybe that's what she actually thought of me. She didn't want me near Pencil. What's even worse, is that.. Gelatin's face.. At the back of the crowd.. He had a huge smile, staring right at me... I don't know.. Why..? I glanced at the door as it opened.

Behind it was Gelatin. "Hey Leafster! You alright?" He walked over without my permission, sitting on my bed as I sat up to look at him. "..Mmm, yeah.. I guess." I put my hand over my other arm, looking away with a nervous frown. I didn't want him here. Not right now... It was bad timing on his part. "It sure doesn't sound like it! Something wrong bud?" He put his hand on my shoulder, giving me a big and goofy smile.. It was like his usual smile.. But in the dream.. It was.. more sinister and evil, as if he planned this all along.

No way! Well.. Only time will tell. I decided to talk to Gelatin about our individual schools and what we liked doing and how we got our talents and stuff until it was around 8 PM, before falling quickly asleep again.. To have peaceful dreams.

I don't know what's going to happen now..

[2] Who's the Culprit!?

I woke up. Another morning... I was shaking a bit, but I decided to brush it, instantly getting out of bed and heading for the kitchen to grab a snack. It was 10 AM, and I woke up pretty late due to me waking up at the middle of the night dreaming about... My childhood. I don't want to talk about it. Anyhow, I walked out of my room and straight to the kitchen to go grab something from the fridge. This is the first time I've done it, so I was praying that someone like Firey Jr or Gelatin would be there.

Unsurprisingly, both of them were there. Firey Jr was looking in the fridge again with a frustrated look, burying his head in his hands. "IT'S GONE AGAIN!!" He shouted, as Gelatin looked at him with a chill expression. "Relax, Jr! There's always other drinks!" He seemed a tad bit worried though, giving me a glance as he saw me walk in. "I CAN'T WORRY! THOSE DRINKS ACTUALLY HELPED ME COPE IN THIS FUCKING HELLHOLE!" He seemed as if he was turning insane, and he didn't know what to do. I worriedly looked at him. "Don't worry! I'm sure we'll figure out who's taking your drinks."

Jr moved his hand through his hair, hyperventilating. He didn't seem alright with this sort of news. "Grr.." I fidgeted with my fingers, when I noticed something out of the corner of my eye.

Red hair.

It was just a single strand, but it was noticable out of the white countertops. I picked it up, examining it. What the hell..? "Hey, uh.. Guys? Look what I found." I showed it to the duo as Firey Jr had a pissed expression. "JEE! HOW DOES THAT H-" Before he could finish what he was saying, Gelatin quickly put his finger on his mouth. "Hmm.. So that makes our suspects.. Let's see.. Roboty and Match!" He exclaimed with excitement. "Oooooo, Drama! I wonder who Jr will kill first!" He giggled to himself. I stared at Gelatin with a

confused expression. Excuse me?

Gelatin looked at Jr, than at me. "Woah! Calm down." He tried to reassure me. "It was only some attempt at dark humor! Not my best subject, y'know?" He awkwardly shot finger guns, only for it to turn out weird.. He didn't want to say anymore. "Anyways.. I think Monoroku's gonna stock up the drinks in like 5 minutes.. So, you can probably try to grab the soda by than!" He pointed out.

Jr was still furious. "But WHO out of those 2 would steal my precious soda?!" He shouted back. I decided to interrupt, giving my input. I knew Match pretty well, Roboty on the other hand? Not so much. "..Well.. I know Match isn't the type to drink soda so-"

"ROBOTY!!" Jr suddenly shouted, storming out of the kitchen with his hands balled into fists. He just interrupted my sentence! Well.. I didn't know what to do now so.. I followed Jr to wherever he planned on going. Gelatin noticed me leaving, and with a goofy grin he walked beside of me. "Wait for me! I gotta see Firey Jr confront Roboty!! The drama.. Oh! It'd be so good on a TV show!" He smiled, skipping ahead as I began to hear loud noises coming from the classroom Gelatin entered. I got nervous.. This was going to be one intense shouting match.

As I entered the classroom, I noticed Gelatin sitting on one of the desks eating a chocolate bar he must've gotten from the kitchen. I looked at where he was staring, and saw the two. Somehow, Jr knew where Roboty was.. Now they're yelling at eachother with insults I can't say. Yeah... Maybe I should leave... I backed up from the classroom, leaving. WAIT! I forgot to get my snack I was originally there for. I better get it and head back to the garden.

I began to head back to the kitchen, as I saw Monoroku begin to walk out of it. He must've restocked it like Gelatin had said! He noticed me coming, quickly disappearing. But unlike the other 2 times I've seen him leave.. There was no note. I didn't really mind, it was a waste of paper and trees! I walked over to the kitchen, but as I went near... I heard some weird noises. What the..? So, the culprit isn't Roboty? Wait.. That's not Match either!

I peeked over to see someone at the fridge. Someone with curly green

hair was raiding the fridge! I couldn't get much of their apperance because the fridge door was blocking most of their body.. But as soon as they closed the fridge door and I saw Firey Jr's sodas in their hands.. I got up and ran to tackle them. I figured out who stole Jr's sodas! But.. Who's this? Nobody else had green hair except Gelatin.. But... Most of this person's hair was green! What the..? "W-Who are you?!" My hands were shaking a bit as I had them pinned down. They could hardly move as they turned their head over to me. "Can you let me go? I'll explain who I am!" They tried to push me off.. And I did get off. I stood up, and allowed them to stand up. I was able to examine them from there.

Their hair was a curly green hair, with the ends of their bangs being spiky and dyed a unique red.. They were wearing small glasses and a green turtleneck sweater that was oversized and much larger according to their sleeves. They dusted off anything that was on their sweater before facing me and taking out their hand for me to shake.

"Anyways.. Hi! I'm Taco. Taco Guidel the Ultimate Food Critic.. That was.. an interesting introduction to say the least.."

Taco?

How have I not seen her before?! "..Oh! Hi Taco. I'm.. Leafy. Leafy Lemon, it's.. kinda weird seeing a new person here." I rubbed the back of my head awkwardly, as she nodded slowly. "Yeah.. I kinda get that. I came here a bit late! Like.. 2 days after? I kinda got the flu so I couldn't come earlier..." She laughed it off, before tilting her head. "I just came up to the entrance of the school, and the next thing

I know, I'm in here at the kitchen! I decided to take some food and stuff.. I couldn't quite find my room so..." Yeah that's odd.. I mean, there's only 16 rooms!

"Huh? Is that actually it..?" Now I kinda felt bad for Taco.. She doesn't deserve to be here! I bit my lip nervously as Taco smiled. "Yep.. Atleast I know someone here likes me! So, how many of us are here anyways? That doesn't include us." I thought for a second, before proudly saying it. "There's... 13 others here!" I stated.... I didn't want to tell her about the killing game with Stapy and Spongy's deaths.. Atleast.. Not yet.

It was going to be real difficult telling her. Taco grinned. "Nice!" She put her hands on her hips confidently. "Well! It's been really cool talking to ya, but I gotta go find a room." Before Taco could leave the kitchen, Monoroku suddenly appeared infront of her. She screamed, falling back and toppling on me. He towered over us, giving us a grin.

"So. You found the 17th student.. Hm?" He smirked. "Well, poor her, not knowing much about the game we're currently playing...." Taco mumbled a few things under her breath. "Wait- 17th?? Wouldn't I be the 15th??" Oh no. I didn't like this, I don't know what to say.. I just let the two have their conversation. "Well.. You would be the 15th student *alive*! So, yes.. But no. There are 17 students in this school."

"...Alive? W-What are you talking about?!" I felt really bad for her... "Well, dear student! You just enrolled to partake in my killing game! Now... You better check the PDA in your jeans for some rules! Your room is on the second floor next to the sewing room! Now.. I better get going~ Ta-ta!~" He suddenly poofed out of thin air, with a small note with the iconic number.. It get me the creeps. But.. Second room? I pushed Taco off. "..We should probably check out your room, huh?" I was really nervous.. Another person to worry about.. Another person to potientally die.. That sounded horrifying. It really did. "...I guess? I have no clue WHAT IS GOING ON?!" She seemed like she was about to panic, but managed to keep herself calm for the most part.

"Alright. Let's go." She took my hand as we began to try to find the flight of stairs for the second floor.

--

Author Zapz here!
HEY I FIGURED OUT HOW TO ADD TACO YOU GUYS HAPPY I NOTICED WHAT YOU WERE SAYING BACK IN THE LAST CHAPTER SO HAH- i still regret not waiting til now gelatin shouldnt be here but oh well he exists and im a stupid idot haha anyways!! im lowkey scared because ive never had to analyze and write taco in such a fashion so,, please give me mercy!! anyways! expect new art of the 17 students reaaaal soon for the chapter images

[2] Another Floor?

I walked up the staircase with Taco, holding her hand tightly incase there was some sort of threat. It seemed to be alright as we reached the top of the stairs... It looked just like downstairs, but apparently there's new rooms.. I glanced at Taco, who was biting her lip. I assumed it was because she was nervous. I wouldn't blame her to be truthfully honest! Things were real scary...

I took lead as I brought Taco further in the hallway, our footsteps echoing lightly through the empty halls.. It just looked like nobody else had found out there's a new floor. I looked at the right, noticing the small door with a fish taco labeled on it. I tilted my head, assuming this was hers. "..Hey. I think we found your room!" I exclaimed, pushing open the door. It had no lock, so it was easy.. I let go of her hand, as I stared in amazement of the new room arrangements.. Everything looked so new and fresh... Untouched.. "Woah! Even if this is some killing game.. This is really neat!" She beamed, hugging me suddenly. "Thanks so much.. I'm so glad I met you out of everyone! I would be terrified if someone else.. Erm, found me.." She adjusted her glasses after parting, putting her hands on her hips and giving me a confident grin.

What? What did she- I won't question it. "Yeah! No problem. Anyways.. Enjoy your new room! I'm going to go check out the rest of the floor if that's okay?" I gave finger-guns before backing out of the room. Taco waved, as I closed the door. I turned over to the rest of the hallway.. It seemed pretty empty, and the hallway seemed a bit more smaller than usual, but I didn't really mind. I kept on walking.. It was mostly unlabelled classroms.. Until.. I stopped, with one having a small wood block sign hung on the door. On it was labeled in a fancy cursive:
Sewing Room

I was curious, wow.. Just from the name, it seemed like a place that

Match would love! But well... She'll probably find it herself. I mean, I would tell everyone that there's a new floor! But I don't know if it's a good idea telling about the rooms.. It would ruin the surprise! I kept on walking down the halls, making a turn to notice that there's only a few hallways on this floor. How odd. I decided to not think much of it and keep on walking.

At the end of the hallway with more classrooms had a pretty large space, as I walked up to the door to read it. To my amazement, it read
The Student Council Room

There was a student council here? That seemed really weird to me.... I slowly went really close to the door.. Hesitant to open it. I don't know what could be behind! I bit my lip... I slowly pushed my hand on the door handle, turning and twisting it until it would unlock. It felt like I was going to discover a dead body right behind this door... Well.. I wouldn't be surprised but-

Oh. It was empty. Nobody was inside, just a oval table right in the middle of the room with chairs surrounding it, alongside of a podium on the opposite side of the room in place of a chair. It was an interesting setup, and hey, who am I to judge? I wiped the sweat off of my forehead as I sighed in relief to know that it wasn't going to be another horrifying sight that I'd see.

The second floor seemed nice, and I didn't plan on going anywhere near the first floor's garden after what happened with Stapy. I will never forget it... Well, I headed back downstairs, passing Taco's room and coming down. As I walked, I wondered... What school did everyone else go to? Did everyone else know eachother while I knew none of them?? The question wandered in my mind until I bumped into someone.

I fell back a bit, trying to keep my balance. After a few seconds, I managed to not fall over again! That's an achievement. I looked at who bumped into me, begging that it wouldn't be one of those people. Well, luckily, it wasn't!

Ruby stood there, a bit dizzy as she wobbled a bit. "Woaah-" She shook her head confusingly. "Huh? Oh! Hi Leafy!" She waved with

excitement. "Happy to see you!" She smiled, as I recongized her. "Oh, hey! It's nice to see you too, erm, I have a few questions for you.. If that's alright! Of course." I wanted to know more about if Ruby possibly knew Match and Pencil beforehand. I mean, I did see them talking before... Well, all the times I did see Ruby that is. Until now, obviously. "Huh? Oh yeah sureee! What's up??" She was humming a weird tune as she bounced up and down using her feet. I put my hands in my pockets as I glanced to the side. "Yeahhhhh... What school did you go to? I mean, before going here... And did anyone else here go there??" I think that's a good question... It'd answer all of my wandering questions about her!

"...Oh! Hmm...." She put her hand on her chin, rubbing it gently.. After a few minutes of thinking, she nodded. "Yeah! I went to FreedSmart Prep! I recongize some of the girls here going there.. It was a girls only school after all!" She paused, to think. "..Uhh... Pencil, Match, Dora, and Taco went there! But Dora transferred like a year before I came, so Pencil told me about her!" She grinned. "Does that answer your question???" Wow.. So many Ultimates in a single school? That was really interesting.. Well, it was a prep school for only girls so.. I should've known they would've had really high standards. I nodded with joy. "Yep! Well... I guess I better tell you about my school than, haha-"

"Oh?" Ruby was completely interested now, fidgeting with her fake plastic red gem necklace as I took a deep breath. "Y-Yeah! Well... I went to a really nice school named Goiky High. Everyone was super nice there and I've met so many wonderful people..." I eagerly stated, rememebering all of the good memories... And bad ones. Well... I was lucky to go to such a school to meet such supportive people! I put my hands behind my back as Ruby took in all of the information, and nodded.

"That sounds really cool- Oh! I forgot. I gotta go get some snacks and bring it back to the girls, sorrygottago!" She quickly jumped up and sped past me, gently shoving me to the side as she ran off. I was surprised at her sudden urgency, blinking as she walked off. I mumbled to myself as I kept on walking...

I could never keep my mind off of him. Why did I have to do that to him...?
Well.. I probably could never see him again now.

[2] Dream Search.

I kept on walking, trying to think of things to do... There was that meeting I had to get to tomorrow.. But today? I couldn't think of much. I really didn't really want to talk to Pencil or.. Match. Ugh, her... I looked up as the hallways were empty for the most part, as my mind wondered off of where Spongy and Stapy would around this time... I would've probably passed by one of them atleast once..

I decided that tonight I would check out that garden... Though, it'd be risky.. It was 8PM right now, and I've been walking for awhile... I think I had a plan.. But if I got caught by Monoroku, who knows what might happen to me. I turned around, beginning to speedwalk back with a fast pace. I'm going to break a rule.

And I hope I don't die while trying..

I held my bag, adjusting it as I went into the hallways with the rooms, noticing Dora and David in the corner of my eye talking before staring at me in confusion. It did look like I was in a hurry, so I don't blame them. I kept on walking with my lip bitten, as I began to pack. I would sleep early and wake up at midnight to do it. I'm going to do it... I just hope I wouldn't be caught visiting that garden.. The scene.. It terrified me. It just did. I took a deep breath as I packed all of my items, leaving my bag on my desk as I quickly changed into new clothes for tonight and walked over to my bed to sleep. I sat on my bed, before turning and laying down on it with a small smile, spreading out my legs and closing my eyes tightly as I slowly felt the darkness take over to allow me to sleep. I couldn't feel my body anymore..

I've entered the dream world. I looked around, trying to say something just to check if I was still awake.. Nothing came out. Alright... I just need to sleep for 4 hours than I could wake up. The thing that when I began to imagine something... A dream...

Something felt off. Well, I was outside with fresh air and the blue sky above. I smiled at the thought, knowing that someday I might be free from this hell.

I walked, looking around as I saw familiar figures... And, everything else began to form.. After looking downwards and around, I realized that I was right by the entrance of my school.. And it seemed like school was about to dismiss for them.. It was like they had completely forgotten about me, as I held my hands and crossed my arms with guilt in my chest.. I felt terrible... Maybe they never actually cared for me.. Maybe they're all alright.. I huffed, as I was about to turn around until I heard the bell for school to end. I saw as various students poured out from the doors, walking past me as if they never noticed I was there.

I recongized a few faces, but nobody I really knew or cared about.. It was until the crowd of students cleared that I saw *them*. My friends! The people I cared about.. They were just there, walking out of school at a slow pace as they looked at eachother. I walked over, walking beside of them as if I was there.. Pin was upset, sobbing and crying as Coiny put his hand on her shoulder to try to comfort her. "..I-I can't believe that Leafy's still missing!" She exclaimed in tears, choking through them as she was shaking. Coiny patted her shoulder, sighing. "..I'm sure the police will find her soon, alright? She'll be okay! Even if she doesn't go to this school anymore.." He mumbled the last part, trying his best to comfort the poor girl. Tears were in my eyes, as I tried to wipe them..

So they did care... And they missed me!

...Did they?

I don't know.. This was only a dream.... I hoped they did! I didn't know. I tried to say that I'm alright.. I'll be back with them soon.. Just running over afterschool after they came out and hugging them tightly with joy.... "You both.. Leafy's gone for good. She's probably dead or something!" Needle complained, clearly annoyed with them. "She's been for months. I'm tired of you guys sobbing over her!"

Months..?

...Has it really been that long? I felt a small wet tear come down my face, as I gazed at the last boy besides them.. *Firey*. Jr's brother.. He had his arms crossed, and he had refused to look at them. "But- We can still hope she's alive.. Right?" Coiny was trying to be optimistic, noticing Firey's worried looks. "I'm sure your brother's okay too, Firey. They'll be safe! I promise." I froze up.. It didn't seem like he missed me.. I felt horrible, not being able to talk.. To tell them that I was alright. I felt myself choking on my words as I watched them.... "I hope.. He's the type to just... not go home for a few days, but never for this long..." Needle thought for a moment, before pointing out something. "Hey wait! Didn't Firey Jr and Leafy disappear around the same time? What if their disapperances are connected?" She asked with a curious expression, as Coiny gave her a concerned look. "...If it is.. There might be a chance there's others missing aswell.."

"Oh no... You know what? We're going to find the missing students and bring them back home!" Pin boldly claimed, as she grabbed the other's hands and began to run off.. I was left behind, watching them.. I just hope they're alright now... Or.. I just hope they're actually looking for me.

..Hopefully.

...

I woke up.

[2] A Wish.

I woke right back up, breathing heavy as I checked the clock. 6 AM. Ughh.. My head hurt so much, as I stretched and got out of bed. 2 more hours... I thought it'd be better if I waited those 2 hours out so I can visit the garden. I smiled as I went to go prepare my hair, maybe trying new styles or something.. I messed with my hair until I was happy with something, it being a pretty similar length but being more clean and wavy. I went to go grab some new clothes, taking out a light green T-Shirt with a leaf imprinted on it before putting my regular bag over me and putting on some boots. Done!

I was happy with my new look, as I turned over to check the time. It was just about 8 AM, as I heard the morning announcement go through the speakers. I grinned, about to leave without any second thoughts until I heard a small cough sound coming from the announcers. I paused, turning over back to my room in confusion. What the...?

"..Hello students. I would like to call you all back to Gymnasium as soon as possible. Please come, or consequences will occur!" Monoroku cheerfully said through the speakers, before ending it off like that. I waited for a minute, thinking in confusion. What the bark..? What's this for..? I was terrified, trying to think of all of the possiblities before messing with my bag and heading for where he said to go to. I noticed everyone else getting out of their rooms and going there aswell, so I decided to catch up with Pencil! I ran over, noticing her with.. Match again.

"Hey Pencil!" I exclaimed, skipping as we walked. Pencil looked over to me, waving with a small smile. "Oh, hi Leafy. What's up?" She seemed a bit worried, probably about the whole announcement. "I'm doing fine! It's so nice to catch up with you again!" Match gave me a small disturbed look, as I looked at her with a smug grin. I'm going to go steal yo girl bitch

"..Yeah. Well, let's just hope Monoroku's announcement isn't something bad." She bit her lip as we went inside of the gym to see what's going on. There stood Monoroku, with a confident but sinister grin as he stood behind the podium. "Wonderful! You're all here now?" He said, observing us as the last few walked in. Everyone was exchanging glances, mostly at Taco... I forgot she was here oops

"I have a few annoucements to make! One of which is... Look around, who do you see? Your classmates....?" He grinned, as he said that everyone began to turn over to Taco as she waved. She didn't seem too nervous at all of the pairs of eyes watching her. "Indeed. There's a new classmate! You can meet them whatever, but that's not important. What's important is my SECOND announcement!" He laughed to himself a bit.

"..Ah yes.. A second ***MOTIVE***~!"

When I thought things couldn't get any worse.... We just met Taco, and now she has to get right into the action.. I felt bad.. But now's not important. Whatever this motive is... It would convince atleast one of us to kill.. Just like Stapy.. It didn't seem exactly purposeful but the thing is, he did kill him.

Or.. was it on purpose?

I had no idea.. But I definitely was not ready for this. I stared at Monoroku with fearful eyes as I held Pencil's hand tightly. I didn't want anyone else to get hurt here... Mostly Pencil and Taco. But everyone else aswell.... Spongy wasn't the nicest of the bunch, but he truly didn't deserve death.

"...Now, now.. You're all aware that you will leave this school if you do kill and get away with it, correct?" He looked at all of us, as we nodded our heads... It was common knowledge, for everyone but.. Well, Taco. Only if she was here before... "Perfect.." He couldn't help but let out a sinister giggle as he presented the second motive to all of us... The driving force to tell us to just... hurt someone else.

"You may make a wish, for anything and everything!!"

"Fame? Love? Money...? That could be all yours if you can get away

with commiting a murder on one of your fellow classmates! This only lasts for 3 days!" He cackled, as I took a step back. ...Oh no. This.. This was tempting. I thought about killing someone for a split second, before realizing that it wasn't right. I wanted Firey to care for me again but.. It wasn't worth it. I growled as I looked at everyone else. They all seemed pretty stunned and shocked from it aswell..

Atleast it wasn't just me..

Well... Now we had to figure out who'd strike next.. And who would die next..

"Well, you may do anything with this information! Aswell with.. Another floor! There is another floor unlocked for you all to explore and visit, so just take this information with a small grain of salt." He put his hands behind his back. "Now.. Ta ta! Have a nice morning." He laughed evily, before suddenly disappearing from a puff of smoke.

..Oh my gardenia.. Would the offers to revive someone get more tempting each time? I didn't want to think about it, as I felt a little sick in my stomach. I couldn't believe it. I really couldn't. I looked as everyone began to leave.. Just like the first motive. Though, they all seemed to have formed bonds at this point.. I was shaking a bit, looking over to Taco as she was stunned... This was her first motive... She was new. Unexperienced in the hell that we've gone through.

I'll have to protect her.. And Pencil! From anything.

I watched as Roboty, Firey Jr, David, Dora, Match, and Ruby left. Each in pairs. I didn't pay much attention, my mind blurring as I remembered the dream from last night. The thought still terrified me, shaking me a bit as I went to hug Pencil..

I just wanted to go home..

Without hurting anyone.

Someday..?

[2] Rotten Hand..

Not again. Not again. Not again.

I was hugging Pencil tightly as my vision began to focus more clearly, and I looked up to her nervously. "W-What are we supposed to do-!? I don't want anyone else to die..." I mean, sure, some of the people here aren't the kindest... But I'm sure they had reasons! All of them do... Pencil huffed a bit, glancing to the side. I knew that another death was bound to occur.. Than the executions! They were just so terrible... I don't know what Monoroku gets out of this..

i mean im not insane anymore so uhh yeah

I was determined to try to keep them safe... I wanted everyone to just live a happy life! How hard could that be...? I gave a small smile to Pencil before parting, looking over to the doors. I walked out, trying to get away from everyone else as I began to do what I wanted to do last night.... Only if that.. dream? nightmare? I'm not sure.. It kept me asleep.. I wanted to know what would be the end of it. Did they even miss me? I really did hope so..

I headed for the garden, taking a deep breath as I walked. The first floor seemed so massive compared to the second.. But that might just be because we were confined in the first floor for awhile... Thankfully, I did remember the path as I walked. As I did... I kept on getting thoughts.. Of the investigation.

Seeing Spongy's hand just dug in the dirt sounded like a terrible idea.. Why would Stapy even do that? I mean... Spongy did die from bloodloss.. But.. His head was hardly harmed. It was just a bit of blood. His arm.. On the other hand? (no pun intended i swear) There was... a lot of blood. Did Stapy just... kill an innocent person just thinking they were dead? Oh my... Thinking about it.. That might just be the case.

I feel bad... But.. They're both gone.. For good.....

Suddenly, I felt myself perk up as the faint smell of dried up blood went into my nostrils. I looked around, confused of the smell when I realized I was just right outside of the garden. The place seemed cleaned up for the most part.. The blood spill was completely wiped away, and the tools were reorganized and it looked like nobody was ever in there.. Except one core thing.
The hand still remained.

I stared at it. Why wasn't it cleaned up...? Was it meant to just be a painful memory of what was of Spongy? The smell was a lot stronger as I smelled the rotting arm just stuck in the dirt. I winced, trying to hold it in as I walked closer to the hand... It seemed really beatened up, and cut clean... I paused to think... What could I possibly do with this..? Well.. It wouldn't be as painful of a reminder if I just.. threw it away in the trashcan.. Right? Surely...

I took in a deep breath, trying to ignore the stench as I quickly went down to grab and pull out the hand right from the dirt from the fingers. Touching the hand was disgusting, as I felt a shiver go down my spine.. It was difficult for me to pull it out the dirt, as it was stuck right in there.. It was as if the body was still connected to the hand and it was merely buried underground. Eventually, I did pull it out. I looked at the bottom, not seeing any signs of bone as I went to quickly throw it away in the trash. My hand was smeared in the scent and color of dried up blood. I wanted to gag.... I hated it... But atleast I knew I disposed of it. It'd be better off it was thrown away anyways. I ran for the bathroom, quickly going to the sinks to wash my hands as I heard someone open the door.

Huh..?

Who was there?

After drying my hands, I turned over to notice Liy watching me with interest. "Hm.." She squinted at me. "..Interesting." She quickly left, pretending as if I had never noticed her. It kinda creeped me out... I didn't want to know why she was there.. Was she planning something? Was she planning to hurt me..?

I really hoped not. I shook both of my hands a bit to get the access water off before going outside of the bathroom and checking both ways to see if she was nearby or not. To my surprise, the entire hallway was empty. I bit my lip. Of course.. I decided to go on my way and walk off, going for the kitchen to grab a snack. Atleast I knew that Taco would probably stop stealing all of the food.. I wondered why.. Maybe it's because she's the Ultimate Food Critic or something.

Oh well.

[2] Another Strike!

I was walking to the kitchen, my hands fidgeting with my bag. I wanted to go grab a quick snack than leave, expecting the usual 2 to be there. I hummed to myself as I cheerfully went into the kitchen to find Roboty, Firey Jr, and Gelatin hanging out. Firey Jr and Roboty both seemed to be real interested in conversation, laughing and mocking eachother playfully as they didn't seem to notice me come in.

Gelatin was leaning against the fridge when he noticed me come in, with a grin. "Oh, hey Leafster! Nice to see you come in, you need a snack?" He shot me playful fingerguns as he turned over to me. "...Y-Yeah! That'd be great.." I smiled, as he opened the fridge and looked through it to find a can of soda, throwing it over to me as I catched. I nearly missed, but I was thankful I did end up grabbing it in time. I held it in my hands, giving Gelatin a big cheerful smile as I popped open the can.

"Thanks." I sipped the soda, tasting it and enjoying it as Gelatin playfully walked over and gently punched my arm. "..No prob!" He looked at me for a few seconds before glancing over to the two on the counter. Something felt off about the scene...

Could it be the missing knife from the knife rack? Or maybe it's because they weren't this close back than. Gelatin seemed a little hurt from the sight of the two speaking. I felt.. kinda bad, actually.

Firey Jr gave me a look when he noticed me, before looking back at the taller figure and whispering something to him before snickering. He probably was trying to insult me.. But I didn't pay much attention to his comments.
I gave Gelatin a final nod before walking off to try to find where Taco went...

Well, I quickly noticed Taco hanging in one of the hallways and was

reading a book. She didn't seem very interested to talk, but despite that, I began to approach her with a smile. "..Hey, Taco!" I waved as I came over. "How's it been?"

Taco looked at me, adjusting her glasses before putting her hands on her hips with a confident grin, still holding the book to her side. "I've been great! *Most* of the people here are actually really nice, and I appreciate that!" She sighed. "Well, there's always those exceptions..."

...Exceptions..?

What did she mean by that.
I decided to speak what was on my mind, tilting my head in curiousity as I brought it up. "...What do you mean?" Taco laughed awkwardly, realizing that I had been listening to what she was saying. "Y-Yeah-! Well... Most of the people from my school don't really like me... I got bullied because I was mostly seen to be erm, too fat because I eat too much food.. According to them." She explained, nervously looking at me. I gasped.

Wait, Seriously??

Who would bully such an amazing, talented, and cool person like her?!

"W-Wow that seems te-" . . .

Before I can finish my sentence, my PDA suddenly started to beep and glow up, as I quickly grabbed it out of my bag to see what was going on. Oh nonon- Please don't say....

I'm hoping...

Already..?

Surely not!

It must be late...

It's only 4 PM.
I stared as Monoroku began to glitch in, showing a smug grin... "A body has been discovered!" He openly announced, once again putting his arms up in joy, as if it was a good thing.... Here we go again.. He began to present what we did last time.. Taco was leaning on my shoulder, listening in as he spoke.

"Now, after some time passes.. Which, you may use for anything! A class trial will be held. You all must report into the trial room ASAP as soon as you hear my announcement, if not.. You'll be... Let's say, PUNISHED!" He laughed, before the PDAs booted off.... There's another body.

I couldn't believe it.... But.. where..?
Taco gulped, as I began to grab her arm and run around to try to find where it was.. I noticed a few people in the hallways, confused, clearly unsure of where this body was... Murmurs were going around the halls, when a loud yelp was heard..

From upstairs.

I took this as a sign, running upstairs in attempt to find this body with her... I still dragged Taco around, desperate to try to find the crime scene.... I ran, looking around as I passed the hall and turned the corner to find the small group.

Bracelety, Dora, 8-Ball, Pencil, and Ruby stood there.... Dora was on the floor, tears streaming down her cheeks as she stared into the... student council room.. W-Why is she so upset..? Did..

Don't tell me.....

I let go of Taco, as I approached the group nervously. I didn't know what to say, as I pushed past the small group to enter.. What I saw made me want.. to gag..

The sight..

David's body laid on the table, spread out as the sleeves of his jacket and pants were up.. Cuts were everywhere, as a pentagram of what seems to be of an satanic ritual was drawn underneath him with candles and everything.. His stomach was clearly stabbed in, as it was clear that he had fought a battle in attempt to survive..

I turned away, wiping my eyes as I walked out... No wonder Dora felt horrible.. She must've found the body first..... I felt horrible for her, not understanding on what to say. She definitely did.

....The second murder.

First Spongy...

Now David.
Who was next...? Who would be the next victim of this horrible killing game... But the biggest question would have to be..

Who killed David.

--
Whoops slipped my hand

[2] Gathering the Clues..

(hey what if i said i was making a meme for my youtube channel based off of this specific chapter how would you feel lol)

O RIGHT- TW: SELF HARM THERE IS MENTIONS OF THAT PLEASE BE CAREFUL

"...Oh my matchstick factory! W-What like, happened..?"

Match had only just arrived, her hands dripping wet as if she had washed her hands rencently.. I wonder why.. She went close to Pencil, shaking as she noticed the body inside of the room. "..D-David's dead.." I said through clenched teeth, holding my fists together as I looked at everyone else. It was time for us to see who's behind this... We don't have all the time in the world, after all..

"..Right. Well, we need to figure out who did this. Do we not.." Liy muttered, as she began to walk in. "..Usually I would be doing the investigation with David.. But well.." She pointed at his body. "Yeah.." Dora looked up nervously, fidgeting with her fingers as she went quiet.. Before softly speaking up. "C-Could I- H-Help this time..?" Liy looked at Dora, nodding slowly. "Of course.." She smiled as Dora walked over.. I noticed everyone else split up, likely to look for clues and such.. So I decided to do the same on my own!

I wasn't too interested in going with anyone else, as I went down to the kitchen.. I swore I saw that missing knife from the knife rack. I was really nervous, just knowing that another murder had happened and the murderer was among them.. This time, it wasn't so obvious.

I kinda hoped it was Match, actually..

The kitchen had the door open, as I entered and looked around. It was empty this time around, surpisingly.. I looked around, noticing the knife rack from earlier... Yep. There's a knife missing. I bit my lip

as I attempted to try to find any sort of evidence that this specific knife was used for the crime scene. Than again.. It could've been placed anywhere else. I don't see why they would be able to come here.. i just realized that its been a few hours since the motive was actually announced so uhh the murderer only had a few hours to plan it out and thats kinda >:(to me

Well, that was until I looked in the trashcan, and there it was.. The bloody knife, right ontop of everything else. I bit my lip, looking away as I noticed Gelatin and Taco come in. Gelatin had a big goofy smile on his face, staring off into space... It was like he never even knew the murders occured... Which, I wish were true.. I wish none of this happened...

"Hey, found anything?" Taco asked, messing with her messy green ponytail and glasses. "..Y-Yeah-" I pointed towards the trashcan, before speedwalking past. I had more things to investigate, and I couldn't waste any time... Surely the evidence would really be even more rushed than Stapy.. Right? Than again, I have no idea how long this person has been planning to murder him! I didn't want to know... It could be anyone.. Not many people like him, but I know Dora definitely does..

Unless.....

I don't think she would've done it.. To her own brother.... She seemed heartbroken at the sight of his dead body, after all.. I clenched my hands into fists, as I went to investigate David's room. As I entered, I noticed Loser and 8-Ball, sitting down and discussing.. They didn't seem to notice me, so I decided to go past and investigate the room... Everything looked fine and clean, and nothing seemed to be wrong with the place. I sighed, as I looked at the two talking in his room.. Before leaving. I also went in to check Dora's room, and there was no main sign of evidence that I could find.. I decided to not invade anyone else's privacy and head back upstairs for the student council room.. Where it was held.

I hope Dora's alright... She didn't seem mentally stable. I walked in to see quite a few people talking to eachother, and the body still staying there. I stared at the body, noticing various cuts on his arms and legs.. It kinda scared me a bit, honestly... His chest was stabbed multiple times in, and the murderer definitely was ruthless with that kitchen knife. I went to go speak to Dora and Liy, who were body by the table speaking to eachother with some pulled out chairs. I waved slowly as they looked over to me. "Oh, hey Leafy." Liy smiled a bit at the sight of me..

"...Been rough, hm?" I looked over to the body, wondering.. Did David ever do self-harm? Those were... pretty bad scars. "..Yeah. I'm suspecting that David cuts himself.. But some of the wounds seem a lot more fresh than others." She pointed out, grabbing the dead arm- WHY WOULD YOU DO THAT- to show to me.

I looked at it, and actually looking at it. Some were definitely in the past, but... Most were actually really recent, and it kinda.. creeped me out.. Just to know David wasn't in the best mental condition to resort to self harm and all.. I looked over to Dora, who was in tears. "I-I-I never thought- He f-felt like this.. I-I wish I could've helped him-.." She was covering her face, wiping her tears with her arm as she looked to me. Than I remembered.. The photograph.. Of a much younger Dora flashed in my head, as I bit my lip. "...H-He didn't want you to worry for him.. He's loved you, too much to make you worry for him." I felt huge pity for Dora, putting my hand on her shoulder... This was a mess, it really was... Liy sighed, getting up. "..Right. I still have a bit more investigation to do.. We don't have much time." She began to investigate more of the room, which gave me the sign the conversation was over.. I backed off, before going to find Balloony.

He's been nervously just looking around, and he wasn't the most pleased to see me out of everyone to approach him. "Hey! Uhm.. How have you been doing...?" I tried to be positive, asking a friendly question just to not scare him. Balloony seemed really irritated. "I-I'm not fine-! I mean- Someone just died! In this very room!" He pointed out, making me nod slowly.... Can he.. maybe... NOT acknowledge that right now. "..Y-Yeah- It sucks but-"

"Do you.. NOT care-!? M-Maybe you killed him!"

...me?

kill him.....

.....

"...I didn't! I just wanted to ask how you were doing! No need toget to such assumptions!" I angrily spat, before turning around and walking off.. Right. NEVER talking to them again... He huffed as he walked off... He probably was friends with Spongy or something..

It seems likely.

I wouldn't ever..

As I stormed out of the room, I heard another beeping noise as I picked up my PDA. Monoroku was back on the screen. "Alright students! Time's up!" They snickered, waving. "Now, all you gotta do, is head into the trial room. Where our second class trial will be held! I will explain the rules once all ***14*** students arrive. So, be on time! Ta-ta~" The screen turned off after the short announcement. I sighed, before adjusting my bag and getting ready to head for that courtroom....

For a second time.

--

its hard writing selfharm ;_;

[2] Second Case.

TW: SELF-HARM IM SORRY THIS CASE IS REALLY SENSITIVE TO OTHERS

I arrived back at the courtroom with nobody beside me, looking as I was one of the first ones to arrive inside. Replacing Stapy and David's was what looked like some sort of school photoshoot of them with a bloody X over it.. I really hoped it wasn't blood, and maybe really blood-like paint.. I noticed Roboty, Dora, and Loser already at their podiums, each of them with a very different expression as they looked at eachother than me as I went up to my podium.. We were all silent, Roboty giving me a glare before looking away. As I stood, I noticed multiple waves of people coming in, soon having everyone at their podiums, and Taco taking the free podium next to Gelatin and Pencil.

Monoroku appeared back at the judge's bench, his hands behind his back as he stood with the gavel in hand. He grinned. "Welcome back students for your second trial!" He cackled as he looked at each of us. I was really nervous, sweating a bit as I looked at him. Everyone did... Just like last time. "Now, let me explain the rules incase anyone had forgotten! One of you murdered dear David, by multiple stabs in the chest! They are the blackened... Now the rest of their classmates need to find out who it is. If you do~ The blackened will be punished! But.. If you fail.. Let's just say.. Everyone but the blackened will be punished, and the blackened will go on to graduate and to go back out free in the world alongside of the wish! Now.. Have fun, and may the trial begin!

He banged the gavel down, ringing through us... We knew it was time. Just like last time.

-- WHO KILLED **DAVID**? --

"Here we go again..." Loser mumbled, holding onto the bars as he

glanced at 8-Ball and Roboty.

Liy began to speak up first about the case, putting her hands on her hips. "Right. Someone here had killed David without any mercy, clearly telling from how terrible his body seemed to be.." She frowned. "He had harmed himself before his murder, but this was long ago, and there had been additional scars after his death."

"Hey wait- Wasn't all of the scars dry?" Gelatin asked with a innocent smile, tilting his head with curiousity.

Dora shook his head. "No, I touched the arms myself. Some of the cuts are much more fresh and newer than the older cuts." She stated.

Loser covered his mouth, shocked to hear that."S-So he.... cut himself..?" He was shaking a bit, trying to hold onto the podium with his other hand to stand. "That sounds horrible.."

"Yeah! I mean, why would he do that? I get he's annoying and all, but he seemed pretty goddamn confident." Firey Jr additionally spat, crossing his arms. "Do you guys have ANY fucking idea when this murder was even held? Maybe we can get something actually fucking done."

"Well. It's obviously before 4-" I tried to say, before being quickly interrupted.

Roboty rolled his eyes. "We know that. Sherlock." He put his hands in his pockets.

"W-Well-! I actually have some information a few people here could back me up on.." Dora said, with an small smile. "It'll help us shorten the time, because David was involved into this!" Well... Dora always spent time with David, so that's not surpising...

"Hey. Before you speak, I would like to point out something." Taco suddenly said, seemingly interested in the conversation being spoken... Why would she speak out like this..? "Leafy knows where the murder weapon is, in the trashcan in the kitchen. Isn't that right?"

I nodded. "Y-Yeah- And..?" Wait... Did Taco think ***I*** killed David?!

Taco put her hand on her chin, looking at me directly in the eyes. "How come you ran off RIGHT after I came in? You seemed to be really interested in other things.." I gulped. Oh she did...

"..W-Well! I had other things to do! I swear- It couldn't have been me!" I cried out, trying to defend myself. "I went to the student council room RIGHT after I showed you the knife!"

Firey Jr growled. "SURE you did! You totally didn't dispose of your murder weapon right than and there." He angrily spat.

Oh no they're turning on me!

I was shaking a bit. "Well.. I couldn't have! I was nowhere near the trashcan!"

"What about you throwing away that wrapper? You could've easily disposed it then." Roboty raised an eyebrow, not believing me and my mere defenses.

Gelatin was going to point out something, until Pencil spoke.

"Calm down! Before we all gang up on Leafy, I would like to mention something.." Pencil said, putting her hand on my shoulder as she looked at everyone. "At around 2 PM, I was walking by the hallways from the sewing room where Match was to check out the place. We've both been there right after me and Leafy departed. I heard rapid footsteps from the hallway and went to check out the student council room to see someone in *Liy's* clothing praying some satanic ritual."

She explained, looking right at her. "Explain that."

Liy took a step back from her podium, her eyes wide as she stared at Pencil. "H-Huh-?! I've never been to the 2nd floor. ***EVER***." She angrily shouted.

8-Ball looked at Liy. "..You've been really suspicious since the beginning.." He muttered. "What EVEN is your talent? What secrets have you been hiding from us..?"

"You think I'd know!"

Dora was shaking. "Guys!! Let me talk there's an explaination that'd help!!" She cried out, rubbing her eyes as she was trying to not breakdown. "P-Please don't accuse anyone like her of my brother's murder... She's done everything she can to help me.." She weakly said.

"Hmm.. What if.. *YOU* killed her?" Firey Jr looked at Dora, pointing at her.

I quickly interrupted him. Why would he say that?! "..Why would you think she'd kill her own brother!? She would never do something like that.."

"MAYBE SO SHE CAN GO OFF FREE BECAUSE NOBODY WOULD EXPECT THAT!" He screamed back at me.

8-Ball facepalmed silently. "...Right.. Let's not accuse his own sister here... Maybe let's get some ***REAL*** proof before we call someone out like this?"

Ruby nodded. "'Guys.. Like 8-Ball said, let's not team up on anyone until we get actual solid evidence.."

"And how is the same exact clothing Liy wears NOT evidence?" Balloony argued back. "Let's just end this and vote her!"

"I-"

Taco was looking at Dora, giving her a pitiful look. She kinda felt bad now...

Match buried her head in her hands, clearly frustrated with how everyone seemed to be acting all of a sudden.

I slammed my hands on the podium. "GUYS. We haven't allowed Dora to talk!"

"...Right..." Match agreed with my statement, giving me a nervous look. I still hate her but we'll work together for this once.

"Y-Yes, well... Me and David last night gave 5 people letters in their room about a meeting of sorts at around 11 AM.. This was intended

to question them of their loyalty and their likeliness to harm another student.." Dora was shaking, as she glanced over to the podium beside of her. "These 5 were Loser, Taco, Bracelety, Liy, and Gelatin." She said firmly. "...I believe one of those 5 had killed David, because I stuck with him until around 1 PM while he was cleaning up the leftovers of our meeting."

8-Ball bit his lip. "Well, this murderer clearly attempted to frame Liy... It seems far too obvious to be her." He quietly said.

Ruby nodded in agreement. "Yeah- I don't think she would be that dumb.."

"...Speaking of those 5... Ringy! you've been really quiet lately ever since the meeting.. What's up?" Gelatin looked at Bracelety with curiousity.

Bracelety looked up, seeming to stare down into nothing before perking up. "HUH? OH I LOST MY VOICE AFTER THE MEETING. I WAS TALKING A LOTTTTTT.." She responded back, still in a very loud voice.

"...It doesn't seem like you did." Roboty growled. "You're clearly lying." Bracelety was sweating a bit from that repsonse.

Bracelety tried to defend herself. "NO I'M NOT!"

"Guys... I think our first focus should be getting alibis from all 5 of the people at the meeting." Pencil muttered.

Loser mumbled a bit. "W-Well.. After the meeting, I went to go meet up with 8-Ball to talk about our old schools... Nothing much.." He said, looking next to him at 8-Ball to support his claims.

"I was just chilling in the kitchen with my boys Roboty and Firey Jr!" Gelatin cheerfully said, giving fingerguns towards Firey Jr and Roboty.

Firey Jr groaned, "Yeah yeah.. We noticed a few people come and go, like Bracelety, 8-Ball, Balloony, Loser, and Leafy."

Bracelety smiled, as she raised her hand up excitedly. "I WAS GOING

TO GET A SNACK AND EAT IT IN MY ROOM!" She eagerly said. "IT WAS JUST A SHORT VISIT! I HAD TO THROW SOMETHING AWAY IN THE TRASH TOO!"

"...Wait a minute." Match looked up at Pencil as she began to speak up. "Didn't Gelatin mention something about no food being allowed last case?"

"...Oh yeah... Dear... Have you not been paying attention..? Also.. About that thing.. It sounded awful heavy when you threw it away.. Maybe like.. ***METAL***." Gelatin titled his head, giving a sadistic smile towards her.

Bracelety went quiet, tears falling down her cheeks as she heard it.

"M-METAL!? I-I WOULD NEVER-" She was choking a bit, trying awful hard to defend herself.

Dora sighed. "..Well.... Before I left, I noticed Bracelety walk past me and talk to me for a few minutes before I left the area.." She looked at her. "B-Bracelety.. .Did you KILL my brother?"

"NO I-"

"..YOU." Liy was suddenly pissed, glaring at her. "YOU STOLE MY CLOTHES?!" excuse me what

"..That does explain like the cuts and the satanic circle.. Don't you worship my friend Icy? Like.. You have HER name on your shirt." Match stared at her.

"T-That's why you've been praying! Y-You wanted the wish for her to love you lustfully.. Don't you!?" Loser covered his mouth, tearing up a bit. He was really... Not having it right now, feeling horrible. what the fuck why would he assume something like this

Pencil gagged a bit. "That's. Disgusting."

I covered my mouth. Shocked by how easily everyone can turn on her... But.. Everything.. All of the evidence was stacked against her.

"Not so easy trying to escape this now, huh?" Roboty looked at her. "...We know you killed David. Just admit it."

"HAHA- GUYS..... I DIDN'T MEAN TO-" Bracelety gave an awkward shrug, trying to brush it off as an accident.

Liy growled, glaring at her. "YOU had the kitchen knife on you, specifically heading for David's room and passing HIS OWN SIBLING. You could've stopped right than and there!" She wasn't happy.

"...T-Time's up.. You betrayed us all... You.. killed my brother.." Dora was crying, breaking down as she crossed her arms and turned away. "Y-YOU MONSTER.."

Bracelety couldn't speak. She felt shocked.. Heartbroken to just be confronted like this. "..."

"Let's vote." Liy said, looking at Monoroku as he perked up with a grin. "Of course! Everyone take out your PDA's and select who YOU think is the blackened." He giggled to himself a bit as I took out the PDA.

Spongy, Stapy, and David's names were all crossed out, as I chose Bracelety. There was no way it wasn't her... She just.. She couldn't defend herself.. She.. kinda admitted it too. But... We don't know

until we try.

....

The PDA turned black, as I placed it away in my bag and looked over to the direction of the television screen. Instead of just staring at it, I glanced at everyone's reactions... They were all mixed, all of them having different faces.. The most clear ones were Liy's and Dora's. Liy was clearly frustrated, feeling betrayed.. She was one of us.

She was part of our group.. Our club.. She's gone now.

She killed Dora's brother. That wouldn't be forgivable just for some lustful dream to come true.

Dora on the other hand, had her face full of tears. She was trying to rub them and wipe them off as she stared at the TV screen. I heard

the slot machine noise begin to play as the objects were being rolled... It had landed on a light neon blue bracelet after a few minutes, stopping and ringing a loud noise.
Bracelety was guilty. It was true... She KILLED HIM.

-- **BRACELETY** HAS BEEN FOUND GUILTY . TIME FOR PUNISHMENT ! --

Bracelety was panicking, looking around as her podium suddenly dropped into a hole as she tried to grab the edge of the hole to not fall.. She couldn't reach in time, and the TV suddenly displayed her in an interesting place. The place looked like a runway, with everything completely black besides Bracelety and the red floor with various white arrows pointing towards her direction. Suddenly, a bunch of

words began to appear and like last time.. Monoroku read it.

The words said the following:

THE CHEERLEADER'S LAST ACT: HOLE IN THE WALL!

Bracelety was shaking, looking around frantically as the wall infront of her began to break down as a massive wall covering the entire room showed up. The wall was plastered with spikes all around except a hole just enough to fit her body in if she went into a specific pose. Desperate, she began to pose as the hole said so, passing through.. One.. Two.. Three..

The walls kept on coming, though.. At much rapid pace, and varied poses as she moved. She was sweating a lot as she looked around. Trying to scream for help, crying as she felt her arms and legs being cut from her moves being a little short. It was terrifying to see her just having to move in these poses. She had to move really fast in order to not get killed.. I heard everyone mumbling to themselves.. Most likely feeling pity for the poor girl.. "S-Someone help... Please.." She whimpered, as she tried to move back and forth.

She was getting visibly tired, talking quietly as she sweated. She wouldn't be able to last any longer... She saw the next... It was way down onto the bottom of the wall of spikes, her doing the splits and having to perfectly angle her hands in the right position. Determined to survive, she tiredly fell to the floor in the split position, putting her hands up... A little too late. Her hands were completely ripped off, making her scream in pain as she felt herself slowly being dragged away. She quickly tried to rip away from the wall as her arms completely cut off from her body.

She was really tired, sobbing quietly to herself. "I-Ice Cube..." She saw the next holes, continuing on even without arms.. She was bleeding everywhere, the white arrows soon turning as red as the floor. She was slipping on her own blood, coughing it out as she felt herself slowly dying.. That's when the big one happened..

She had to jump high.. REAL high, needing a fair headstart just to make it. With a tired face, she didn't move.. She just stood there, panting softly and looking up... It was over for her. She couldn't take

it any longer. Bracelety smiled, before saying her last words.

"...I'm sorry..."

"Ice Cube."

She stood still as her entire body was completely pierced by the spikes, blood splatted everywhere as the wall began to slow down. She was twitching a bit, as blood dripped down everywhere. She was impaled by the spikes, her chest slowly raising up and down still before her body went completely limp. She just died.

Right infront of our faces.....

I looked away from the screen, tearing up at the ugly sight as I looked at everyone else. I heard Dora's soft sobs, as she quickly ran out of the trial room right as soon as she saw her impaled body no longer move. She looked to be at her breaking point.. She just.. lost her close brother. Even if it didn't seem like it, I knew he loved her dearly...

Just from the photograph of the younger her. The one I slipped out of David's hands..

Liy noticed her run off, stepping away from the podium to go after her. She seemed to be clearly worried for her likely close friend.. I watched back up to the screen as it turned off and turned completely black as Monoroku was laughing hard at the sight. "Class trial's over~!" He shouted, a little disappointed at Liy and Dora running off.

I wouldn't forget that... Even our close friends could die one way or another.. Even someone like Bracelety.. or David.. I sighed, as I got out of my podium and left like everyone else.. I noticed Gelatin staying back, but didn't take much interest in it as I walked out. I.. I was just shocked. I wouldn't be able to sleep.

Just the sight of her impaled body.

It's going to scare me for days. I don't even want to know who's next to strike. I just want to go home.. With Firey... Pin... Just.. home. I miss home so much.. I feel so homesick and I don't know how to feel about the rising conflicts and the deaths... They all horrify me and scare me.

None of them deserve it.

I closed my eyes as I slowly went to walk for my room. I don't need to talk to anyone right now.. I entered my room, slowly taking off my bag and hanging it up as I changed back into pajamas and went to rest in my room. I was too tired to deal with anymore of this. I don't even want to know what might happen to Liy, Dora, Pencil...

Or to anyone, honestly.

When will things ever be the same?

CHAPTER 2 | END.
*13 OUT OF **17** REMAIN.*

Author Zapz here!
I've been absolutely thrilled to do this one since the beginning, just the drama and the deaths! Anyhow, thanks for #11 on the BFB tag! I really doubt I'd ever get #1, but it's a dream haha.

[3] Sweet Dreams... Or Nightmares~

I slowly walked to my bed, rubbing my eyes tiredly as I was in my room. It was about 8PM, but I didn't want to do anything with anyone.. I think I'll have a nice sleep... Yeah, that'll refresh me. I couldn't get the image of her impaled body, and everything just went so fast... All of us just realized what she did to him... I shuddered at the thought, as I crawled into bed in my pajamas. I snuggled up in my blankets, trying to get some rest.. I turned off the lights.

....I tossed and turned, unable to sleep. I just wanted some rest, please.. I couldn't force my body to just sleep like this! I was shaking, just shivering at the thought of maybe somebody was out there... Plotting a murder..

...

Nah. I doubt.. We just finished the case..

I need to shut up, I need to stop thinking.. I closed my eyes, trying to force my body to sleep. It was so difficult. I had no idea what time it was, but it was probably getting late.. I guess I could take a nap later, but what could I do for the meantime? I couldn't really leave my room without getting in trouble with Monoroku. I don't want to risk it. I slowly decided to rise up from my bed, smiling weakly as I went to go tiredly grab the watering can and fill it up from the sink in my bathroom.. I turned on the lights of my room, my eyes squinting as I tried to adjust.. It was 2:36 AM. I dragged my body over for the plants, holding the watercan in my hands.. I noticed them visibly shaking.. Maybe I'm cold? I began to water the plants, tending to them.. It was sorta my job, after all. I haven't taken very good care of them.. Like I have myself.

Just doing this made me feel at peace, as a small smile tugged as I

watered. It was just a nice thing to do, it really was. You'll be okay, Leafy.. You'll survive! I'm sure they still care for you, Leafy. I swear.. Please.. Don't give up now... I held the watering can tightly as I moved to the next plant, closing my eyes, annoyed. I needed to stop thinking that everything and everyone's fine.. Everyone clearly isn't.. We just witnessed 4 people die. Of course everything's not fine! I'm pretending everything's fine while everything isn't. I needed to do something about it.. I needed to make sure no more deaths happen!

oh my fucking god.

I took a deep breath, going back to reality as I realized I overpoured too much water in the plant. I gasped, feeling tears go down my face as I tried to wipe them off. I felt horrible, just thinking about it. I placed the watering can back where it was earlier, before going back to the bathroom to wash my face. I needed to calm down. I'm not going insane. That's exactly what he wanted.

Wait.

...What's this? I fished something out of my bag, I tilted my head in curiousity.. It was a photograph, seemingly at the bottom of my bag.. I was so confused, shifting it around. I turned it facing me, and that's when I saw them. My friends. All in a happy group together, just talking.... With me.. Right in the middle of the group. We all seemed so happy.. But now I don't know if I'd ever see them again. I miss them so much... I sighed as I put the photograph back in the bag, stuffing it deep in there so I never have to see the people I love ever again. I hope I can get out of here, someday. I sighed, looking myself in the mirror as I held the sides of the sink tightly. I needed to see myself.. I needed to calm down. I'm sure I'll get back to Goiky.. Back in my highschool, where all of my friends are... Maybe bring my new friends from this diaster over.. I looked away, parting from the sink as I went to walk over back to my bed. I needed rest. That's what I wanted... I'm.. just so tired.

I collapsed onto my bed, spreading out as I began to doze off into a deep sleep.. I only saw the endless void of nothing, listening.. hearing... Nothing. It was just me and my thoughts. Alone. Together. I had nothing to dream of, as a few seconds later in that dark void I suddenly saw light. I woke up. I sat up, just rubbing my eyes as I

looked up and at the clock. It was a bit past 8AM, and it seemed that I slept in for a little... I didn't mind. It wasn't a big deal to me, I just... I just wanted everyone to stop arguing and fighting, and finally befriend each other.. We can maybe survive past this if we'd stop killing. Though.. That's a fantasy that would probably never come true. I got up from bed, going right for the cafeteria in my sleepwear. I didn't even bring my bag with me for once. Not like I cared.

I just wanted to see all of them.. Alive. I walked out of my room, heading for the cafeteria quietly. "...Hey." I turned around to see Liy, standing there with a upset look. She didn't seem to have much sleep either, having small bags under her eyes. "...Oh, hey Liy." I tried to force a smile, looking at her. She probably was upset because of the trial yesterday. I wouldn't blame her.. Everyone fought.. Accused each other.. That's not what I wanted to see in us. "Going to get breakfast?" I nodded in response, gazing right at her.. I examined her body, as her posture seemed much more different from usual. "Can I, erm, join you?" She asked as if it was some sort of crime to, which I smiled.. I didn't want her to worry. I wanted her to feel happy and safe, and she's one of my close friends in this place. "Yeah. That'd be nice!" I attempted at being optimistic, going to grab her hand as I began to lead her for the cafeteria. I hummed, trying to add something positive today... Everyone probably was upset, or uncomfortable with Bracelety's plot... I mean.. She sacrificed David for her lustful feelings. I felt horrible for Dora, and I just hoped she was alright.. I should check on her later. I entered the cafeteria, still holding her hand as I went over to the kitchen to see if the usuals still hung out there. This time, it was only Firey Jr and Roboty. They were speaking to each other, clearly laughing and not thinking of it as much. Roboty almost immediately noticed me, looking over and giving me what I could only make out as a glare. "..Hey, leaf bitch's here." He growled, as he began to walk over with his hands in his pockets. "What the fuck do you want." He spat, looking at the two of us. Liy wasn't having any of this, muttering under her breath before facing him right in the eyes. "We want breakfast. Just get us a snack or whatever." She spoke.

"Awwe, can the wittle lweaf and owobvious serial kwiller not get their fwood themselves? Oh what a shameeeee..." Firey Jr mocked, the both of them snickering at the joke as the young child went to

grab two apples and toss them over to Roboty before he handed them to us. Liy wasn't amused, and I was disappointed. Not mad, disappointed. "Right.." Liy rolled her eyes as she dragged me away from the duo, holding her apple in hand as I began to eat mine. "I fucking hate those two." Liy muttered as she walked, listening to me eat my apple as we walked outside of the cafeteria. We went to go sit down by her room's door, as according to Gelatin, food wasn't allowed.. The thought of him reminding us all terrified me.. There were so many mysteries.. Just.. I wonder... Speaking of mysteries, I've always been curious about Liy's talent. How did she forget..? What even is it? Jr's mocking might just be true.. What if she's actually the Ultimate Serial Killer..? But than.. Why didn't she kill us all already? Is she trying to gain our trust? Did she get sick of killing? I had no idea... But, the thought still wandered in my head.

We both kept on eating the apples, talking and messing around.. It's gonna be rough being the three of us now, but I'm sure we'll get over it. Somehow..

[3] Girl's Gamenight!

After we ate our apples, we got up and went to throw it away together. "..So, what's up?" I asked, with a smile as we walked back over to the hallways, Liy messing with her goggles as she looked at me. "Well... After the whole.." She went quiet, seemingly trying to find the words to form what she was about to say. "...Incident." She finally said, putting her hands behind her back with a bit of disappoint and hatred in her expresion. She was biting her lip, avoiding eye contact.. I knew exactly what she meant.

"I decided to hold another meeting, to erm, completely exile her from our group." She explained, looking for me for any sign of approval of her plan. I nodded. "..Sure, where we are we meeting?" I had a few questions, but that was my main one.. "Ah, right! We're heading for Pencil's room right now. She told me that she wanted to have it in her room today, and we talked before I ran into you." She walked over to her room as she looked over to her, putting her hand on the door. I walked up by her, as she began to push against the door and open it slowly using the pressure of her hand.

As the door opened, behind I saw was ..... Match and Pencil, both sitting on the floor on the carpet. I frowned at the sight of Match, but pushed it to the side as we began to sit down after Liy closed the door behind us. "Hey! I'm glad you all came by. You all already know her, this is Match and I believe she could just come for this meeting.. Maybe future ones if you'd like." no. I would NOT like that. Thank you very much! "Interesting surprise.. Anyhow, I'm sure you planned the activity today right?" Liy didn't seem to mind having Match for this one time.. "Mhm! We're going to play monopoly. I found hanging around in the new room of the third floor." She smiled as she placed it down. "Now, just to take a bit longer.. How about we pair up into 2 teams of 2 just to take a bit longer?" She suggested with a grin, as I nodded. Oh! I'd love to be working with Pencil...

"Hey! Pencil, can we pair up?" I shot my hand up with a eager smile, looking at her with pride. Match suddenly stood up, putting her hands on her hips. "And, like, who says you can pair with Pence pence?! She's mine!" She spat, looking at me as I turned my head over to her.. Oh, I forgot.. "...Match, you're always hanging out with her! Why can't I have my chance??" I whined.

"Girls! How abou-" Pencil was quickly interrupted.

"Like, we're BFFs! You can't take that away!"

"So?! You're not her only friend!"

"..Yeah, she has like, Ruby! She like doesn't need anymore!"

"She does!"

"No! Let me pair up with her for once!"

"Leafy, like, nobody cares if you wanna be all needy and pair up with the person I've known all of my life!" Match stomped her foot on the ground, crossing her arms as I got up and glared at her. Pencil was visibly getting nervous, which I really didn't want but.. I needed to tell her to fuck off! "You're being so clingy!" I complained, huffing as Liy stood up and pushed both of us to the side. "Both of you need to calm down! I'm going to partner up with Pencil, just so you both can get along for once!" She hissed, clearly not happy with our agrument. Match rolled her eyes and looked away. I crossed my arms, staring at her. Damnit.

For the next few hours, we went to play Monopoly. It was difficult getting along with her, just because of how frustrating and picky she was. We kept on arguring on what to buy and stuff, and I got really upset. In the end, Liy and Pencil managed to easily beat us. I huffed, crossing my arms angrily as I looked away from her. I wasn't happy... I couldn't see what Pencil and Liy were doing, but I knew that Match was equally upset at me. I decided to get up, checking the time to be around 8PM. "Alright. I'm leaving! Thanks for having me. I guess." I was still upset at Pencil for inviting her over, than again, she probably bugged her over it or something.. I left, going to the kitchen to grab some food before leaving. As I walked into the kitchen,

nobody seemed to be there this time.. Huh, odd.. I quietly went to go grab something from the fridge to heat it up before leaving and heading for my room.

As I walked with the food in my hand, I was heading back to the hallway.. I looked over to my room, pushing my hand on it and was about to step onto it before my food was quickly snatched by someone. I quickly turned around to see who did it. "Nuh uh uh! Don't forget the new rule! No food in the rooms." He presented the PDA, showing the original rules and one new one..

"**#11** - Any food or drinks of any types with the exception of water are prohibited in the bedrooms."

I tilted my head, taking out my PDA and looking down to see the same thing. Interesting... How long has it been since I've checked the rules anyways? I put away my PDA, sighing. "Right. Uhh... I'll just eat in the hallways than." I quietly said as I grabbed back my meal and sat down right infront of the door of my room. "Is that allowed?" I asked, raising an eyebrow. Gelatin went silent, putting his arms on his hips and sticking his tongue out. "Sure it is honey!~ Just don't do it again." He grinned, before walking off. I was kinda confused why he called me that.. Additionally, why is he correcting people over the rules? Sorta confused me, but I decided not think much of it as I finished my food and threw it away inside of my room. It was late by this time, so I decided to go to sleep. Unlike the other night, I was able to sleep soundly.

It was morning now, or.. It should be. I lost track of time.. I'm going off of the clocks in this damned place, but thinking about it, it might as well just be midnight in the real world.. Where I should be. I decided to go talk to my other classmates, since it's kinda been awhile... I've always kept to myself, and I sorta made enemies with quite a few. Well, I was opening my eyes when I suddenly saw Firey Jr staring at me. I screamed. WHEN THE FUCK DID HE GET HERE

"Hah! Did I scare you??" He snickered, getting up. "Morning, shithead! Thought to wake your sleepy ass up, it's 11 PM you bitch!" He stretched a bit, clearly being playful as I sat up and stared at him in confusion. "H-How did you get in my room..?" I tiredly asked as he confidently put his hands on his sides and looked at me. "Jee, you're

quite forgetful! I wouldn't be surprised, you also forgot to lock your room." He pointed out, doing a single fingergun using his hand. "Anyways, I gotta get goin'. I gotta wake up the other sleepy asses who forgot to lock their doors! Cya, dickhead!" He began to leave, running out from the door. Huh. I guess he's really starting to act like his age.. He didn't even try to wake me up, he just... Waited there. The thought creeped me out, as I got up from bed to go change. I kinda stopped hanging out in my room, as I went to step out of my room. I went to walk away from Firey Jr, who was trying to open the other rooms. Most of them were locked, but he managed to barge into someone else's, for what I assume to try to practice the same deed as he did for me. I decided to go check out the third floor today, with a bit of curiousity of what could be there this time.. It might be better than the 2nd floor.. I began to go towards the flight of stairs, noticing Balloony coming down the stairs and passing by me. It looked like he didn't want any eye contact whatsoever. I decided to not think too much of it.. He did accuse me of commiting murder after all. I climbed up the second flight of stairs shortly after, reaching the top and new third floor..

I looked down the hallway, it seems to be like your average school hallway. Which, isn't that bad... I began to walk down the halls, looking around with curiousity. I didn't exactly know what I should do, maybe check out the rooms or something. No idea.

Well....

I wonder what the new rooms are.. And which rooms would most likely have a body..

a dead one, more specifically.

[3] The Third Floor.

As I stepped onto the third floor, I felt a new feeling go over me. A feeling of dread, telling me to go. Despite this, I began to walk ahead.. Looking around.. Most of them seemed to be classrooms, nothing too important. I hummed to myself as I began to enter one of the rooms, as it had a special label that I couldn't quite read on it. Inside was a small library, with bookshelves covering the entire wallspace.. In the middle of the room were a few desks, and something I'd thought I would never see.

Technology.

There was a computer, right on one of the desks... It seemed broken and very outdated though, which wasn't that unexpected... The two people in the library were Liy and Loser, which wasn't really surpising... Liy was gazing at the computer, seemingly trying to do something with it. I didn't really know what she was doing, but I didn't want to mess with it. I looked over to Loser, who were at one of the bookshelves looking through the books. I smiled a bit, going over to talk to Loser. "..Hey." I waved nervously, as he looked over to me. "Oh, hello Leafy... It's been a while since we last spoke, huh?" I nodded, smiling a bit at the sight of him. "..Y-Yep-! A lot of things happened from when we last talked.." I watched him take out a book from the shelf, as he faced his entire body towards me. "Yeah.. Erm, sorry.. I haven't exactly talked to that many people lately... I've been working on a new book, actually." He smiled. "I'll explain it to you." He began to walk over to one of the study desks, as I followed him. i wonder if its a smut fanfic ;) ;)

I always loved his works, I mean, he's a child prodigy in writing! I've always read his books when I was younger, and it shocks me that we're about the same age... "Well.. I've thought about our current situtation, and maybe I could write my own murder mystery!" He smiled weakly. "...I have all of the deaths planned too and stuff.. It's

going to be about 18 people in a murder mystery game, and one of those 18 is a murderer intending on killing everyone else." He explained, as I listened in with interest. I mean, murder is sorta a sensitive topic to me after what happened and all but it was really interesting to see him explain stuff!

"..I intend for the really silent girl to be the murderer in the book, where she doesn't really talk so nobody would suspect her. There would be about 4 survivors in the book, and I might write a sequel including them in another one." He smiled at me, seemingly waiting for me to give feedback. "Oooh! I really love the idea, Loser! I'm sure it's going to be your best work yet!" I exclaimed, smiling as he put some hair out of his eyes.. "I'm glad you enjoy it.. I'll be sure to try to mail you a copy of the book once we get out of here and I publish it." He said, still clearly having some hope of all of us surviving somehow.. I liked that hope.

I wish I had it...

"..Yeah! That sounds nice! Thank you so much, Loser.. I'd love to read it." I eagerly said, glancing over to Liy.. She was still at work on that computer, making me wonder some things.. I decided to not say much adn get up. "..Anyways. I should get going now, have fun writing the book!" I smiled, hope glimmering in my eyes as I ran out of the room. There were still a lot of rooms to check, but there was one room that quickly caught my eye as soon as I left the library. It was a doorframe with neon flashing lights coming from it. My eyes were immediately drawn towards it, beginning to walk over it to check it out. In big bold letters, right beside the frame had a sign that said 'ARCADE.' I was surprised to see this out of all things in the school, but okay. I walked into the arcade to be amazed by the sight.. The room was surpisingly large, with a lot of games and such to do.. I noticed a few people in the room, mostly people like Ruby, Firey Jr, and Roboty hanging around here. Huh.. I hardly see those two split up.

I decided to step out and revisit it later, mostly to play some more fun games! I went to go walk, turning some corners as I kept on passing multiple classrooms.. When I came across a new room. The nurse's office. With curiousity, I went to go enter into the room to check it out.. Something felt off. I noticed a used syringe on the floor,

and the medicine cabinet open... What the.. I went to go explore, noticing the medical beds.. All of them seemed empty, but one.. One was occupied. But who was it..?

As I walked over to the bed with curiousity.. I noticed it to be Match. ...Why is she asleep here..? Wait.. Is she asleep.. or.. I went to go in and check the pulse on her neck.. After a few minutes of attempting to check her body, I felt nothing. I stumbled back, staring at her.. No. This is wasn't what I wanted. She's dead.. Oh my tree. I need to get someone else. Someone from the arcade might work.. I began to run, trying to head for the arcade when I felt something grab my hand from behind and pull me back. I screamed in surprise, trying to turn around but my head forced to stare forward. NONONONO I DONT WANT TO END LIKE THIS! NOT TODAY- I was trying to struggle, seeing a scalpel being waved around on the side of me. I screamed, trying to get someone to hear. Before I could escape out of their grasp, I felt the sharp object go right by my neck, cutting my throat. I screamed out, seeing red.. I don't know if it was their clothing or my blood, but I gagged. I fell to the floor, feeling an additional stab right to my chest. I weakly tried to get up, only hearing footsteps as the culprit seemed to had ran away. I sobbed to myself.

These were my last moments. I would die. Forever...

Only if...

Firey... Pin.. Coiny.....

I wish I can see you one more time before I go..

for one last time.

please.

I smiled, weakly. It was game over. The end... I had hope... One last hope I would see someone and speak to them one more time.. There it was. Pencil was walking down the halls, turning the corner and seeing me. "L-LEAFY?! oh my lead no.." She covered her mouth in shock, staring down at me. She was visibly shaking, falling to the floor on her knees as she just.. Saw me. I felt bad... Her 2 closest friends, dying like this.. I hope she can live. I want her to stay alive..

For me.... Well..

I looked up to her, my vision blurring as I gave one last smile..

And my last words.

"i-i love you. ..please check the n-nurse's offi-"

I blacked out. I'm gone. I'm dead.... I can't see anything. I can't feel my body. Is this what it feels like to die? Forever?

.....i'm sorry match.

i really am sorry.

---
whoops slipped my finger x2
yes.

[3] New Horizons.

..What... The. Hell. The last thing I saw was the body of Leafy, her collapsed body with a bloody cut right at her throat. She was trying to tell me to get others, to what I assume would be to announce the body. ..Well, this isn't good. I don't know what to do. Where do I go? Who do I tell..? I sighed, as I continued to run down the hallway. My heart was beating fast. I looked over to the arcade, thinking that's where someone would be. I spedwalked right for the arcade, breathing harshly. "G-GUYS!! L-LEAFY-" I coughed out, trying to not break down with my tears. Ruby looked over to me with a concerned look on her face. "What about her??" She curiously asked, skipping over to me. "S-SHE'S-" I couldn't. I grabbed Ruby's arm as I looked up to Firey Jr and Roboty who seemed to be talking to eachother. "..What? We don't fucking care." Roboty looked at me with an unimpressed look.

"NOW'S NOT THE TIME!! SHE IS DEAD. WE NEED TO GO." I angrily shouted, going into the arcade to grab Firey Jr's arm because he's shorter. I don't care if he's really strong we need to go get this body discovery announcement NOW. I began to walk the two, struggling a bit as Firey Jr tried to pull away into the hallway. Roboty rolled his eyes, following the three of us as we went. "L-LET ME GO!! I DON'T CARE IF LEAFY'S DEAD!"

"WELL I DO!" I spat through tears, before dragging them around one more corner to see her body.. She must've collapsed and died while I was looking for these fucking... Ugh, whatever. I pulled the two over, soon letting go as the two met their eyes on the body. Ruby reacted exactly how I would think she would. She covered her mouth, "O-Oh..." Firey Jr rolled his eyes. "S-So!? I-It's just a body!" His voice seemed much weaker.. But.. It was too early for a body. Before I could speak, the PDAs were booting up again. Finally!

I took out my PDA, looking down as Monoroku tiredly rubbed their

eyes. "..Wuh- Oh you have got to be kidding me.." He groaned, looking up at the screen as if he knew we were all watching him from our small mini PDAs. "...Well, a body has been discovered. Before I even... Said the motive. That's the only reason people should kill-" He complained a bit. As if this murder thing was getting tiresome. "..Whatever. Well. You know the deal." He began to re-explain everything to everyone, as if we don't remember what to do..

"Now, after some time passes.. Which, you may use for anything, a class trial will be held. Yadayadayada- Go to the trial room or you'll be punished whatever. Just. Check out the new rule." I sighed as I turned it off. "...W-Well.. I guess we should wait for someone." I muttered. I looked down at my knee, which was completely scuffed and had a small bruise on it. Wait. I forgot to introduce myself! I'm... so stupid. My bad, let me do so. Well..

Where do I get started... I'm not quite in the right situtation or mindset.. Well. I'm Pencil. Pencil Grayphite. I'm one of the students attending Exit Academy, and I was chosen as the Ultimate Vlogger in order to attend this place.. But the worst thing is that, I just witnessed one of my close friends die right in my eyes.

I'm in tears. Pain. I couldn't believe it. I watched as the other remaining students began to come up... Well.. Most of them... Match..? Oh no.. Please don't tell me she did it. I was shaking, "...M-Match..?" I quietly mumbled, looking around for any sight of her.. Wait.. Where did Leafy say to go again..? I looked at Liy and Dora, "..H-Hey.. Could you two follow me..? I think someone's missing and I don't want to risk dying." I mostly needed them just incase there's

another body... Which.. I hope it isn't Match.

Liy looked at me, nodding. "R-Right.. Let's go." I felt ashamed to know that just yesterday was when we all met up and played together. I knew Match and Leafy hated eachother, but... Never to the point where she'd kill her! I just hope Match's alright oh my god.. Even if.. She did kill her.... I crossed my arms to walk over to the nurse's office, just knowing Dora and Liy would be together. I knew that Liy had deep trust in Dora after last time.. And knowing my current situtation, the same would have to definitely apply for me.. We all trust eachother. We all have to.

I need to start trusting people, and hope for god they don't die... I don't know who'd survive this sickening game. Match is next.. I know it. She's bound to die if she's even alive at this point.. I bit my lip at the thought of it, before arriving at the entrance of the nurse's office. The door was open, assumingly from Leafy... It wasn't so far away from when I saw her. I slowly entered the room with the two, instantly noticing an empty bottle of a certain medicine on the floor. I decided to kick it to the side and go check the area out.. The shelf was open with a few misplaced items, and the beds all seemed empty besides one..

Hm..? Someone was asleep on the bed, as I slowly went over to it to see.. There it was. Match was fast asleep.. I was confused, going down on my knee as I looked over to Liy in concern. Liy put her hands in her pockets, looking down at me as she went to take off the blanket covering her body. She was in her normal outfit, from what I've last seen her in, but her arm had a bandage strapped right on it for.. Some reason.. Why is it on her? I needed it.. That's why she came here in the first place. I knew she went here, and that's what scared me when Leafy told me to come here...

I went to go check her pulse, and... I found nothing. No pulse. I fell back, trying to wipe my tears. Oh my lead.. She's dead. She's dead too.. Both of them. I can't. "She's dead.." I whispered softly as I fell back onto the floor. Dora and Liy audibly gasped. "O-Oh my..." Dora was.. Surprised. She must've felt bad for me.. Well, I understand how she felt now.. I was in her situtation now. The PDAs went back up again, as I shakingly grabbed it using my hand. I stared at it, using my other hand to hold onto the bed. I tried to get up, horrified...

"...Well.. Another body has been discovered. Great. You have double the time now, since there are now two dead bodies. Goodluck~" He turned off the PDAs fast, seemingly rushing through the BDA.

No.....

Who's the monster behind this.

Who killed my friends.

Who dared.. To leave me in such despair.

They will pay.

---
woo new protag broskis!! idk how u guys didnt know the protag would be pencil it was kinda obvious oop- though i was considering making one of my kins a protag bcuz :) but i need to try doing other perspectives so!! i hope you guys enjoy how i write her.

[3] My Friends.

I miss them. I miss them all.. But they're gone. For good now.. All I can do now is avenge them by moving on... Which I will. I stared at the two as I slowly rose up from the bed. "..We need to find out who did this.. That fucking monster will pay." I growled. Nobody hurts my friends. NOBODY. I walked past the two, feeling myself kick a small object on the ground as I moved my head to face the floor. Huh..? I moved myself down to my knees, curiously looking at the object that I had just kicked. I picked it up, examining it to be some sort of bottle of sorts.. A dangerous one, that's for sure.. The chemicals in here is lethal... To the point of death.. Just telling from the side effects.

....Like for killing my childhood best friend. I rose myself up as I looked at the two, handing the bottle to Liy as I continued my investigation. I wasn't quite the type to do this sorta thing, but this was urgent... Both victims were so close to me.. Just seeing them die fucking hurts.

"Wait.. So if this was the chemical used, how was it injected?" Liy asked, looking at me. I shrugged, not sure.. I knew the medicine shelf was open, so I looked over there to find Dora already checking it out.. After a few seconds of me spending the time to walk over, Dora showed me exactly what I expected to find. A used syringe, in the hands of Dora. "..T-The weapon must've been this... Whoever did it must've injected it in her arm and placed the syringe back here!" She exclaimed, as if it wasn't obvious already... Well, atleast she tried. The shelf looked fine.. Besides one other thing. There was another bottle of some sort of medicine laying on the shelf, clearly misplaced. It stood out from the rest of hte objects, as I grabbed it to give to Liy... I mean, I might as well let the others check it out aswell..

"..Cyanide? What the fuck.." Liy stared at the bottle for a bit longer. "It doesn't appear used, but.. It was clearly intended to." She stated, a little confused.. "..Interesting." She shoved it in her skirt pocket

before turning over to Dora. "Find anything else?" Dora shook her head in response, making me sigh... There's not much evidence for how Match died... But... There's something that upsets me.

Match's blood is on my hands. Not.. directly.. But, I told her to go the Nurse's Office to go grab me a band-aid so I can repair my scrapped knee I gained while tripping on something. It was a really rough fall and just... Knowing that would be my last time to speak to her now was painful. I wish I could say I wasn't apart of this at all but.. I'm most likely wrong. "We should check out Leafy's body." Liy suddenly spoke up after the moments of silence I took to think about my actions. Me and Dora looked at eachother, before giving her a nod... It's going to be hard jsut trying to stare at her body for any longer but.. If it gets to the bottom of this case I will.

I know it wasn't me.. That crosses myself off, and 8-Ball was with me before I left to check on what Match was doing..

And saw Leafy's body just.. I wish she told me who killed her.... It would've made it so much easier to avenge her.. Now I need to find out who the hell did this.. I'm pretty sure it isn't Dora.. She wouldn't kill like this...

She isn't that desperate to join him....

I think this case would have to depend on alibis... But just by process of elimination I really don't think it would be Taco, Liy, or Ruby... They simply don't seem likely to commit such a crime, especially without a motive.. The fact there was none this time around is terrifying. I mean... Who would do such a thing by pure choice??

Additionally, why did Monoroku seem so pissed about it? It just.. confused me. This whole entire fucking mess of a place confused me. But.. Hmngh.. I guess it's whatever. I needed to snap out of this mindset and get back in the game. I went back into reality, as we walked to Leafy's body, a small group still staying there and speaking to eachother.. I decided to talk to Ruby first, just to check out what she was doing in the arcade and if she had seen any suspicious activity..

"Me? Well!! I was at the arcade playing some super cool games, I was

hooked!! Those games were super super amazing and- Oh sorry, getting off topic aha-" She laughed nervously, seemingly breaking out of her odd rambles again.. I didn't mind, really. I got used to the consistent rambles, where she always spoke about this girl and how she always loved singing this silly song to her..

"..Well, it's fine.. Was it just you, Roboty, and Firey Jr there the entire time?" I asked, hoping to get some info out of this. "Hm? Well, mostly, yeah!" She smiled, seemingly happy to help.

"..Mostly?"

"Well.. Roboty did leave for quite a bit before coming back.. About.. 5 minutes before you came!" Ruby stated, making me freeze up in terror.

...THAT BITCH.

Oh, I KNEW WHO DID IT. I growled a bit, kinda losing my shit rn brb man

I took a deep breath, facing her. "..Thank you, Roo-bee! That helps, alot actually." I smiled, knowing that I basically solved the case.. It was.. really easy. Just.. He seemed really suspicious from the start, and I knew he hated Leafy..

I'm not sure why he killed her..

It.. made no sense. It really didn't. I'd have to ask once it's time. My question is if he was the killer of the two of them or just Leafy...

....ill have 2 talk 2 him if he killed fucking both of them.

...Whatever. Atleast I have somewhat of a good idea on who's fault it was behind this mess. I mean, now I have to convince everyone else...

Now that might seem easier said then done.. Perhaps. I know Liy and Dora would..

I want to be nice though, and simply let everyone else speak before I make my final claim against him. It'd be nice getting some sweet revenge after all.

..that's assuming it is him..

--
helpiamsotiredthisfucking3rdmurderisgivingmepainhelpijustwannamoveon

[3] Third Case.

After speaking with Ruby, I knew it was about time once the PDA's made that noise everytime there's an announcement... I ignored the announcement, beginning to head over for the courtroom to get this over with. I knew who it was by now, but there was that chance... Surely it wasn't that easy? Why would they cover their tracks so poorly? ...I wasn't the most sure. I stepped into the courtroom after heading downstairs and looking around.. It felt like my fault for their death. Both of theirs... I went up to my podium, standing there as I watched everyone else enter... Taco stood by me, while Leafy's podium had her potrait hung there, an bloody X on it... Eugh.

I hated the sight. I hated the sight so much. I hated this stupid game that *thing* decided to put us through. Why? Their own entertainment? I was disgusted... Soon, I saw Monoroku at the judge's bench with the gavel in hand. He seemed fairly tired, compared to the last two times we've seen him in that position.. "Well, welcome back to your third trial.." He gazed down at everyone, clearly not in the proper mood for this sort of thing. I knew even if they didn't want to do it now, it was business to do so.

"Now, let me explain the rules incase anyone had forgotten. One of you murdered BOTH Match and Leafy, one by a deadly dose in the arm, while the other with a swift cut to the throat!" He was getting back to his regular attitude, giggling a bit. "They are the blackened... Now the rest of their classmates need to find out who it is. If you do~ The blackened will be punished! But.. If you fail.. Let's just say.. Everyone but the blackened will be punished, and the blackened will go on to graduate and to go back out free in the world alongside of the wish! Now.. Have fun, and may the trial begin!"

He hit the gavel down, as I faced back to everyone else to finish this once and for all.

-- WHO KILLED **MATCH** and **LEAFY**? --

"Okay, LISTEN UP." I started, holding onto the podium bar tightly. "One of you bastards thought it was okay to hurt my friends. You all better have good alibis or we'll need to chat." I said through gritted teeth, watching as everyone else got visibly nervous.

"W-Well... I was in the library with Liy.. I was going to look for some books to brainstorm more concepts for books." Loser stated, as Liy nodded in agreement.

Liy crossed her arms. "Both me and Loser were in the library the entire time until we heard the PDA's go off. It couldn't be either of us." She plainly said, giving a small nod to me.

"Me and Roboty were both in the arcade for the entire time. We couldn't hav-" Firey Jr was about to finish his sentence before I slammed my hand on the rails, staring at him in anger.

I rose my voice as I spoke, "The ***ENTIRE*** time? Explain why Ruby had told me Roboty left, only coming back merely 5 minutes before I came in, the perfect amount of time to kill the *BOTH* of them." I refused to believe Ruby lied to me. There would be no way!

Unless..

No... Ruby wouldn't do something like that! That doesn't sound like her. Without a motive too!

"...I went to go grab something from the kitchen. Is that a big fucking deal?" Roboty shot back, clearly irritated with my callouts.

Before I can speak, Liy decided to interrupt me. "How about we don't start accusing people suddenly and grab more alibis..? There's always a chance it could be someone else." Liy firmly said, basically telling me to shut the fuck up and let everyone else speak

which is fair.

8-Ball sighed. "I was with you, Pencil." He blankly said, as I nodded. I knew he was with me, we were just hanging out in the sewing room when I tripped on one of the wires of the sewing machines.

"Well.. I was just hanging out downstairs in the kitchen! Yknow? Trying out all of the foods?" Taco smiled, shrugging. "Balloony could back me up! I was offering him some of the food."

"AND YOU WON'T STOP STEALING **MY MOTHERFUCKING SODA!**" Firey Jr shouted angrily.

Liy rolled her eyes."Shush. That isn't important right now. What about you, Gelatin?" She looked over to Gelatin suspiciously, being one of the last ones to say an alibi.

"..."

Gelatin was quiet, staring off into who knows where.. Wh... Why now?!

"HEY." Liy growled.

I glanced over to him confusingly, as Taco just SLAPPED HIM IN THE FUCKING FACE- I guess that's ONE way to wake him up..

Gelatin clearly woke up from that, rubbing his cheek as he glanced over to Taco. "Ow.. Right, what do ya need?" He looked up over to Liy. "Sorry.. Was into another daydream aha-"

"Right. Where were you during Leafy and Match's murders?" Liy put her hands on her hips, waiting for his answer.

"...Oh! *Killing* them. Duh."

"N-"

excuse me?

Liy shot a small glare at him. "Wait. *Killing* them?"

"Yep!"

"So wait- Y-You're telling me.. You're the one behind their deaths..?" Loser was shocked, and bothered.. Why... Why would he just confess that suddenly?? That just made no sense!

"Hey wai-"

Gelatin nodded, giving a grin. "Sorry about that everyone!! I kinda got too **bored** of this place sooooo.."

That's not right..

No murderer would ever openly admit like that.

That makes no sense!

"No, wait." I just realized something. I quickly looked over to Balloony and Taco. "I have a question."

"Hm?" Balloony looked over to me, confused.. I knew what I was doing.

I spoke, thinking that this might give us 2 suspects. "Did you see *Roboty* in the kitchen while you were sampling the food? He claims to have left and only come back due to grabbing something from there."

Taco put her hand on her chin, thinking for a second before shaking her head. "No. I've seen nobody else enter.." Gelatin seemed unamused at hearing those words, just glancing over to him as he looked at Taco with a disappointed face.

"Yeah... We saw nobody!" He agreed with Taco's statement as I looked over to Roboty with a grin. I knew it. Gelatin must be lying... But... Who could..

Dora.

"Wait if Roboty's lying about his alibi than..." Liy looked at Dora. "Where were you?"

Dora sighed. "What I was **TRYING** to say was that *Gelatin* was me with the entire time in my room!" She seemed really upset. "It's not him." Gelatin crossed his arms and pouted.

"You're no funnn!!" He whined.

Well, that answered it.. It had to be Roboty.

Firey Jr was visibly sweating, biting his lip nervously while Roboty kept calm. "..For the last time. It's not me." He spat.

"..May you explain this, than?" Liy suddenly took out a piece of ripped fabric, the ***exact same*** color as his jacket. "If we look right at your sleeve, it should be ripped a little due to you struggling a bit to attack *Leafy*." She simply said, waving it around.

Roboty tensed up. "..No. That's just a mere attempt to frame me, look." He put up one of his sleeves to show off. It seemed perfectly fine.

Liy shook her head, "No. I mean.. Your **OTHER** sleeve."

.....

Roboty growled. "It's NOT me." He refused to show the other sleeve, clearly tense as he looked down at her. Liy rolled her eyes, putting the ripped fabric in her pocket before going over her podium to grab his sleeve, lifting it up to show everyone...

It was ripped. Just like she had said.

"LET GO-" He grunted as he pulled away. "Fucking god.." He mumbled as Liy looked at everyone.

I weakly began to speak, just feeling a lump in my throat..I couldn't believe this. "..Please let's just *vote*-" I choked, wanting to just break

down.. I couldn't. I..

I don't want to embrace the fact they're both gone... Forever.. It'd be impossible to get them back. I wiped my eyes as I felt the wet feeling of tears stinging my eyes. Monoroku cackled as he began to say right on cue. "Of course! Everyone take out your PDA's and select who **YOU** think is the blackened." He stated with a confident smirk.

Six names were crossed out.. Double more than last time.

I had that feeling it was him, but couldn't confirm it until Liy showed it.. The fabric.. I went to vote him as I put away my PDA, looking back up as I adjusted my headband. I watched as the rest of them had voted and the sight of the slot machine being played as it landed right on Roboty's icon. It was him.. The noise of a successful vote had been echoed.

-- **ROBOTY** HAS BEEN FOUND GUILTY . TIME FOR PUNISHMENT ! --

That fucking bitch....

Before he could fall, Roboty jumped back as it fell down into the hole. He looked around angrily. Everyone was speechless as they watched him turn around and attempt to run, trying to escape the fact they were caught and needed to be punished. It was shocking to see.. The door swung right open, allowing him to enter. As soon as it did though, the doors began to slowly shut as the TV screen was

lowering to cover the door. Firey Jr was paranoid, and took the chance to follow.

He ran away from his podium, running after him. "W-WAIT UP-" He cried out as he ran. Oh my god... I watched as the TV showed what I expected to see.. It wasn't the normal school like before.. It was something much more different.

Suddenly, the screen began to show the title. I should've known that there was no way he would escape... He had to meet his fate.. But.. Why did Firey Jr follow? He knew this was going to happen. I... I never knew how close they were.

I felt sick inside watching.

Monoroku began to read the following words, as it signaled that the execution would begin.

RUN! HIDE! THE GREAT MECHANICAL FALL

The camera showed Roboty running in what seemed to be an endless hallway, him desperately trying to escape the fact he'd have to meet death. I noticed Firey Jr still chasing after him, him trying to call out to him and reach out. Roboty didn't respond as he kept on sprinting for it. He had lots of stamina as someone with a mechanical mind... He was growling, continuing to speed up as Firey Jr was trying to chase after him. The duo kept on running through the halls. The sound of loud footsteps echoed through the courtroom, as if he was running towards us.. I was shaking as I watched. This was just as painful to watch as seeing Leafy slowly die right in my eyes... Firey Jr screamed out. "S-STOP-!" He was crying, trying to wipe his eyes as he ran.

Roboty kept on running. He was reaching what seems to be the end of the hallway... He was breathing rapidly as he ran, determined to get out. I could just tell from his eyes... He wanted to escape death so badly.

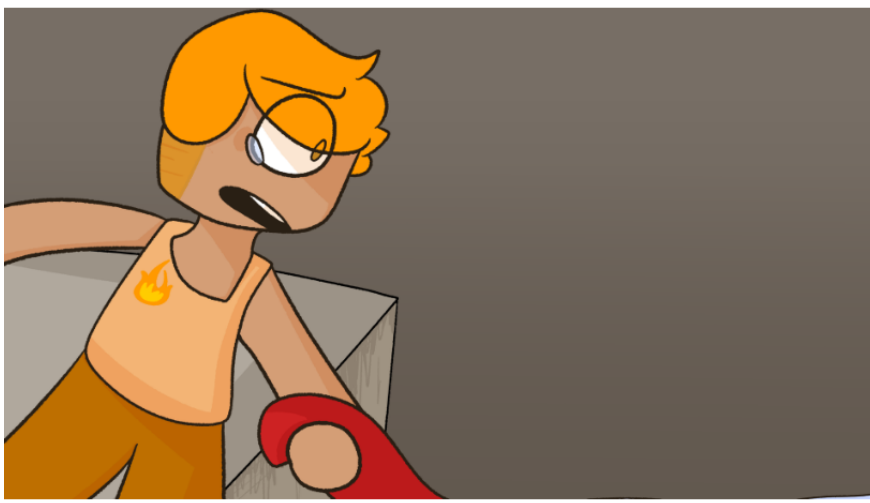
I wanted him to die, though.

I wanted him to face the consequences...

He forced me to lose my close friends.. For that, I don't think he deserves in any way to live. No way. I don't care what anyone thinks... If he wasn't going to be caught, I would've been the one to kill him. I want justice for my friends, and I want to avenge them.

Suddenly, Roboty had reached the end of the hallway.. Instead of freedom, was a ledge which he had barely stopped at. He took a deep breath as he stared down at it... It was a massive and deep pit, reaching way down. At the bottom was water, which must've been lethal for him... After all, he *is* a robot. He seemed safe, and alright. He wiped the sweat off of his face as he breathed out in relief.

That was until Firey Jr ran into him, pushing him over the ledge. He quickly grabbed his sleeve, staring down at him in shock as he did.



Holy shit... "H-HOLD ON-" He gasped out, panting harshly as he tried to pull him up with both of his hands.. He was desperate to keep him alive, and seeing that he was the Ultimate Weightlifter... His talent could finally come to use. Though, it seemed as if Roboty was slowly slipping out of his jacket.

"I can't hold on for much longer.." He grunted as he tried to cling onto his jacket, while Firey Jr attempted to pull him up.

"pleasepleasepleaseplease-" He whispered weakly, as he tried to pull him back. He seemed to just want him. Alive. Okay...

Firey Jr took too long as Roboty was slipping out of his jacket, him getting tired as he tried to pull the heavy mechanical object up to safety. He was grunting, making noises of struggle as he tried.. Though, his efforts and even his strength were not enough. It was over for him.

Roboty soon slipped out of the jacket, screaming as he fell down to the water and eletrocuted. Firey Jr fell back, falling to the ground as he held the jacket in his arms.

"..R-Roboty..?"

"Please.. A-Are you-"

He scrambled up, getting on his knees as he clinged onto the jacket tightly. He knew he failed as he looked over the ledge to the remains of his body.. All in the deep pit of water. He felt tears come to his eyes as he cried. "R-ROBOTY-!" He shouted, as he felt defeated.

He looked down at the body, before looking up to the noise of a chute opening.

Suddenly, a massive round rock, seemingly looking like the shape of a round **jawbreaker** began to fall down from the ceiling.

It fell right into the pit, as Firey Jr stared wide-eyed to listen to the sound of Roboty's poor body being crushed under all that weight...

He cried out, using one hand to reach out to it. Only knowing that he was dead.. For good.. He sobbed silently, burying his head into the jacket as the TV screen began to slowly rise and the door to where the two of them had ran out open. Aswell as another door back to the school.. I backed away from my podium in stunned silence..

I just realized.. Both of us. Me and Firey Jr had lost the people close to us... The realization hit me hard, and I felt horrible.. I decided to go check on him first, wondering what he was doing as I watched everyone else take the door to the school. I felt really bad. He was basically the fault of his death! Pushing him off... I went to go through the door where the long hallway was, watching as Gelatin went right by me. "We should probably check on him.." He mumbled as he began to speedwalk over. It seemed as if the hallway was much

shorter, as I saw the ledge with Firey Jr quietly sitting on it. He was on his knees, covering himself with the jacket.

I could hear his soft sobs as the both of us walked behind him.
"..Jr..?"

"Go away."

"Jr, I.. I care for you... You know that. Right?"

"...Go away..... Please.." He lifted his head up, still crying as I heard him sniffle. Gelatin glanced over at me, before slowly walking up towards him. "...I'm not leaving. You're hurt.. I can just tell from your voice."

Firey Jr growled, wiping his face as he got up. He slipped on Roboty's jacket, as it covered his body.. It was massive compared to the small boy, but it seemed to be his comfort item. He looked over to Gelatin.
"..S-Shut up.." He growled as he lowered his head and turned over towards me and walked past me. Gelatin following after... I was hesitant..

I decided to shut myself up before I said anything stupid and follow after them. Out of here.

...I shouldn't have told Match to go.
None of this would've happened otherwise.. Right..?

...Probably.. Though.. That poison.. What did Roboty plan on doing with that?

I couldn't ask him anymore..

I'm sorry, Leafy.
I'm sorry I couldn't avenge you properly.
I'm sorry Match...
I'm sorry for causing all of this tradegy.

CHAPTER 3 | END.
10 OUT OF 17 REMAIN.

---

my kinnie self is dying inside oh my god help me cries but YAY CHAPTER 3'S DONE I HATE THIS CHAPTER SO MUCH EBSIDES THE ENDING AHGFWEHGEWHGGW SO MUCH HAPPENED I WISH I DIDNT RUSH LIKE THIS XDDDD

[4] Heartbroken Feelings...

I woke up, another morning in this fucking hellhole of a *"school."* Right after I had left the execution place with Gelatin and Firey Jr, everyone decided it was better off just getting some sleep and waking back up into the morning. I hated it here. So many lives were lost... When the hell am I going to get out of here. I just wanted out. Everything here was tramutizing, and even if I did manage to get out I might as well fucking kill myself for losing my closest friends. I miss them so much, and seeing one of them just gone because of some fucking idiot and his little shitty friend decided to cause some harm **BEFORE A MOTIVE WAS EVEN SAID**... It was *sickening*.

I decided the first thing to do was to check out the new floor. Because every single time right after the trial, the doors are opened to a completely new floor ready for death coming in any direction. To be honest... I'm not going to be surprised if I don't survive. I fucking hate so many people here, and they probably overheard some of the conversations I had about them. Mere gossip, nothing *tooo* bad. I felt a tear go down my cheek, quickly wiping my eye with my sleeve as I walked upstairs to the next floor. I passed the third floor, a shiver going down my spine as I remembered all of the events that had unfolded yesterday.

I never felt that close to any of the other victims, and now the two closest people I can call my family were dead. I only really had Ruby at this point... I'm really surprised she got accepted in a place like this, honestly. She never seemed the type to really like jewlery, and she always had more of an interest in love and matchmaking. Don't even get me started on *that song* she always hummed at the lunch tables while me and the other girls spoke.

To be truthfully honest, I thought for that one motive it would be Match... She's my childhood best friend and all! We've known eachother since we were first born, and we worked together so well..

I knew so much about her. Even if she's... *clingy*, to say the least, at times.. I still cared for her. But, when I pulled the photograph with my name from that box. What unsettled me happened to be that it was my friend, *Book* instead. I was so confused...

I don't know what he was plotting, but he probably believed that someone like me was going to die. I wasn't quite surprised on Match or Ruby's photographs at all. I knew that they were close to them. Match had Bubble, while Ruby had a girl not from our school. I've met her a few times, and I heard she went to a school called Goiky High.. Thinking about it, I think I remembered someone here went to that school...

I don't remember who.

Her name was Flower, and I heard that she was well-known in her school for being good in hair styling and fashion marketing. Maybe her and Match would've worked so well.. But now, erm, she's *dead*. Gone from this world. *For good*. She isn't coming back... I just need my body to just finally realize that so I can move on. Even if it hurts... Even if it stings. So much.

I looked up, feeling myself nearly falling as I held onto the railing of the stairs. I guess I was daydreaming or something.. I coughed a bit in pain, feeling a terrible gut feeling as I walked the last step I had originally tripped onto to the next floor. I looked around... The fourth floor. I didn't know what was around here, curiously starting to walk deeper into the main hallway of the floor, looking over to the rooms.. Unlike the other rooms, there was a short hallway with a open framed door, with two splitting hallways from there.

I went to go through the said door, looking around to see what it was... It appeared to be a gym of sorts, more of a weightlifting room.... This seemed to be a room purely to appeal for Jr, as I looked around the place. It seemed pretty massive for a singular room, running my fingers by the metal machinery as I gazed over to a few items that had caught my attention. I tilted my head as I went closer to it, and went to pick it up.. It was a light blue bracelet, with the words 'ICE CUBE' written on it by what appeared to be a dark blue gel pen... As soon as I picked it up, I knew instantly who this belonged to. My gaze softened, as I looked around for a few seconds

before slipping it on and hiding it under my sleeves.

I went to leave, as I went to the right hallway to begin checking out the other rooms.. It seemed to be all jampacked with air and classrooms, lining both sides of the walls. I turned a corner, and kept on walking... It was all just stupid classrooms, and kinda weirded me out as I walked. After turning another corner, I finally found something that interested me... This floor was really weird, and I wasn't quite used to the composition of the place. There wasn't really anything here besides 3 doors on the right side of me, as I noticed a door that seemed a lot more grand than the other classroom doors. I went right for that middle door, going to read the nameplate.

Four's Office.

...I knew Principal Four was already dead. Monoroku literally showed us his dead body right in the beginning of this killing game, right before that fucking bitch decided to force us to kill eachother. I hesitantly went to grip the door handle, pushing forward as I walked inside to see the room... It was a typical principal's office, with there being a large desk with two seats infront of me and an massive office chair behind the desk. Behind that chair had a window, clearly for viewing... Though, the windows had seemed to be broken and boarded up, and the place was a complete mess other than that. Blood was everywhere, and it just seemed like there was a clear struggle with some sort of crimescene. I took a step back, startled as I finally processed what was inside, sighing in relief as I realized it was also empty.

I put my hands on my hips, taking a deep breath as I mustered the courage to step back inside. I looked around curiously as I tried to not take in the smell of the dried blood. It's been awhile, and I wasn't very amused to see the sight. The place was filled with interesting information... I noticed a shelf with multiple photographs of the staff, squinting at them as I saw them all smiling... Including what appeared to be Monoroku, before he turned.. Completely sadistic and insane. I looked away in fear, not wanting to know what even happened to get him to that point.

I noticed a framed photo that had caught my attention, taking it off and holding it in my hands as I gazed at them... It was all of them,

smiling and happy.. But instead of a normal photograph, it had what appeared to be Four completely crossed out with blood, and the rest of the faces being smeared with the blood to make them unidentifable. Besides Six's. He looked so much different, still with the messy hair. He wore a dark blue jacket with the number six printed in a light blue similar to his hair. He had a scarf covering his neck and he was smiling and seemingly laughing in the photo with everyone else....

Only if we were as happy as them...

I feel resentment against him. Just for ruining all of our lives... He forced people to kill. He forced people to lose lives for his mere entertainment, and it was fucking sickening. I dropped the frame in anger, just feeling the overwhelming hatred for all of this... So many people's lives were ruined... I used my feet to step down onto the frame, the glass breaking as I took a step back... I felt tears pouring out my eyes as I turned and ran away. There was nothing else important here anyways. I tried to wipe my tears as I ran downstairs, wanting to go back to my room for the rest of the day to hide and just.. feel miserable.

That's what they wanted, right?

Before I could successfully run back to my room, I bumped into someone. I winced as I nearly tripped backwards, just merely catching myself as I balanced back forward to see who I ran into. Liy stood there, quite surprised to see me in such a state. "Pencil? You good?" She looked at me as she went to help wipe my tears as I gazed at her. I shook my head, stil feeling horrible as she patted my back.. "It's okay... I'm here, whatever happened.. I promise you will be okay." She smiled.

"..Mm.."

"Here, how about we head to my room? I just got a new piece of information to share that might be very important." She grinned, as she grabbed my hand and took me over to her room where she opened the door and let me in. I smiled a little at the comfort, wiping my tears. "What information did you find?" I asked curiously as I went to go sit over to her bed, and she stood there with a nervous

look.

Liy took a deep breath in, looking at me as she seemed to be hiding something behind her back. She was clearly nervous about what she was about to say, as I noticed her muscles tensing up as she looked at me with a straight face. This had to be important, and I was open to hear all about it... That's kinda what I was known for. I was always open, and I always knew what my fans wanted. They were always my top priority, along with my friends.

She finally said it, after a lot of hesitation and pacing a bit from left to right.

What she was about to say would leave me with shock, and silence in response.

"...I think I know what my talent is."

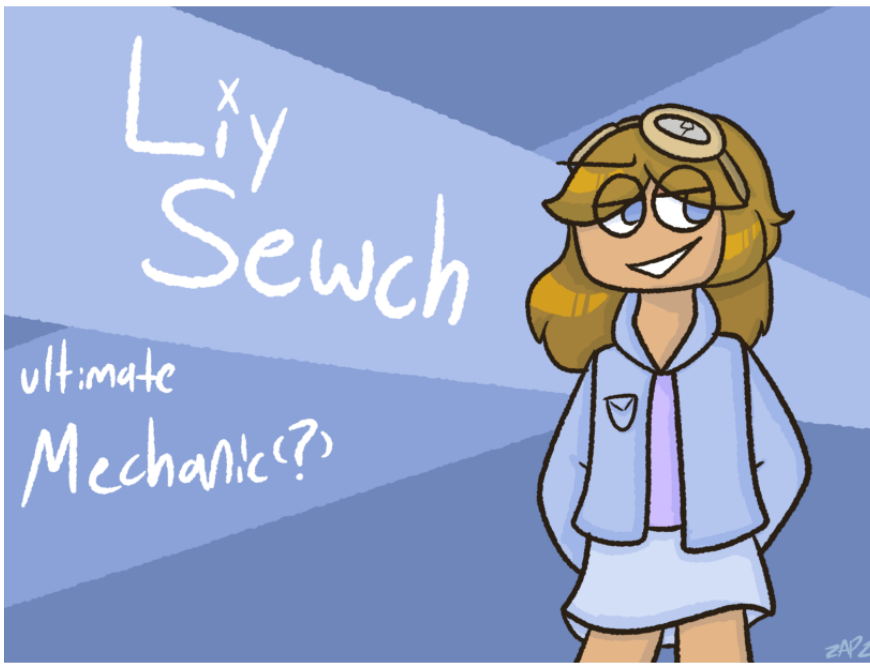
[4] Secrets Untold.

I was baffled to hear that, "...Huh? You finally remembered?" I was really confused and puzzled. "Well, it's perhaps just a theory but. There is a chance this is my actual talent! It was while I was trying to fix this goddamn hunk of junk." She grinned, uncovering her desk to reveal a working computer. Wait how the fuck did she get a computer??

"W-"

"I found this in the library, and after inspecting and trying to figure out what was wrong, I managed to fix this. I believe that I was only able to fix this because it's connected to my *true* talent!" She grinned, putting her hands on her hips as she waited for my thoughts on her theory. I paused, trying to process this... She... She actually fixed a broken computer? "..What exactly do you think your title is?" I nervously asked, watching as she unzipped her jacket to reveal a light purple t-shirt underneath. She put her hands behind her back, taking a minute to close her eyes.

"Well... My name is Liy Sewch. I believe that I am the Ultimate Mechanic." She firmly said. "Though this might be wrong, I truly do believe this is the case." She appeared pretty confident with her words, and the thought of her possibly finally finding out her true talent is amazing. Mechanic huh? That would be useful in the real world...



"W-Wow... I-" I gazed at her. "..It would make sense, in a way. You did repair the computer, and mechanics do repair stuff." I don't know how to feel. She seemed so happy to finally find out what her talent is... I don't want to take it away in case it isn't true in the end. I smiled, clapping a bit. "Now that I have solved the mystery about myself... I have another mystery to solve." She moved some of her hair out of her face. "But that's for later..."

I tilted my head but decided to not question her. "So wait, does this count as the girls meeting because of erm... The others are.." I didn't want to finish my statement, gulping and tearing up a bit at the thought. The memory... I just want it to go away. "Hm. I don't see why not... How about we meet up every day? I could bring Dora with us for some." She offered, myself nodding. "That doesn't sound too bad." I grinned playfully, getting up from her bed and nudging her as I walked past. "Anyways... It's getting a little late, and I don't want to be punished. See you tomorrow?" I suggested, noticing a small nod. "See you tomorrow." She waved as I walked out, taking a deep breath. I was still trying to process the trial and the execution and everything, and this wasn't helping.

It was nice to know who she truly was, though.

I walked to my room, throwing myself on the bed. I knew my phone wouldn't work in this fucking place, but I decided to pull it out. Tears fell from my cheek as I noticed the wallpaper being myself and Match. Both of us... So happy.

Why did she have to go?

Why was it her?

Why wasn't it me...

I huffed, putting my phone to the side as I turned off the lights and closed my eyes to go to bed... It was dark, as I slowly drifted off to sleep after a few minutes. I felt calm, and at peace. I wanted to go to the school purely just so I can get the hell away from my fans, but with the information of what happened here... I'd prefer to be tormented by my fans. I hated them at times. They were honestly really creepy, and honestly shipped me with other people..?? Even with Match. We weren't comfortable. None of us were. I don't like those.... people. I don't like them. at all. I woke up, jerking up from my bed as I looked around. It felt like I was in a nightmare, but I couldn't remember if I was in one or not. I rubbed my head, looking

over to the clock as I squinted to see it as merely 5 AM. 3 hours. Good enough, I got up from my bed. Preparing to go to the bathroom to begin styling my hair... I took care in my beauty.

After an hour or so of making sure my outfit looked good enough, I went to go back to sit on my bed, not wanting to ruin my clothing. I looked down at my phone I had put to the side the other night, going to grab it and squinting as I tried to adjust to the sudden artificial light. I yawned tiredly, stretching a bit. My body felt so numb. I knew there would be no signal, but I still had access to my gallery and photographs, which I went to instantly. My old life... Before this fucking mess. Before everyone died.

Most of the photographs consisted of me posting, and a few videos of me vlogging my many adventures. I smiled weakly, noticing one with my friends. Book, Ruby, Match, Bubble... All of them... We were all so happy, with big smiles. I remembered that day when we all left for this stupid academy...

"Congrats you guys! I'm so glad you became so well-known that you were accepted to this school. I heard they had things for every single student, so I'm sure you'll enjoy it." Book eagerly said, clapping happily as she had one of her arms wrapped around her smaller best friend, Ice Cube. "Woill you goiys miss us??? Ploise don't foirget about us!" Bubble exclaimed, hugging Match and sobbing a bit. I watched as Match gently pushed her off, comforting her. "Like, don't worry!! None of us will forget the friends that made us who we are today, right guys?" I noticed her hand began to brush over mine, making me blush a tiny bit as I went to grab it and rub it gently. "Yeah, don't worry." I insisted. "We'll always talk about you to our new friends." I smiled, feeling so happy back then. "Y-Yeah... T-Try to call us once you have the time to... Please.." Icy nervously said, burying her head into her. "We'll miss you.." She softly said, looking away from us. I nodded. "Will do!" Ruby was jumping up and down excitedly. "Come on! We shouldn't be late on our first day!" She began to take my other hand, running as I chased after her. Due to me holding onto Match's earlier, she tagged along. I turned back, smiling as I watched them slowly drift off into the distance.

If only I knew that would be the very last time I'd ever speak to them.

I went to stand, noticing it become 8. Holy shit have I... I dropped my phone on the bed at the realization, tearing up a bit. I've been thinking about them too much. I tried to forget about them as I went to walk out, heading over to Liy's room to wait for her to leave. She was my only friend at this point. I and Ruby kinda distanced, but we still hang out often. "Ready to go?" Liy suddenly spoke, breaking my train of thought as she opened her door. I nodded as I grabbed her hand, not speaking a word as I headed for the cafeteria with her for breakfast.

I noticed everyone else still alive come, watching as everyone quietly grabbed their food and went to sit. There were a few changes that I could notice instantly... Firey Jr was sitting all by himself at the end of the table, hissing at anyone who even tried to sit near him. I squinted as I noticed a few new friendships form. Dora and Balloony seemed to be talking and being friends, 8-Ball and Loser were both striking up a conversation, lastly, Gelatin and Taco seemed to both be friends. I don't understand how girls like... *Taco*. Could possibly befriend someone as idiotic and stupid as him. I never really liked Gelatin.

He was a joke. Everything to him seemed funny... Even the concept of death. It made me quite suspicious of him, but I didn't say anything as I began to bite into my pancake, feeling the warm maple syrup I had poured onto it earlier sink into my tastebuds. I loved the taste, savoring it before swallowing and going to eat more. Even with this shitty place, at least the food here was better than Freedsmart's shitty cafeteria food.

I went to enjoy the food, finishing the pancakes and leaving it there as I finished the remains of the milk and got up. I didn't see Liy anywhere... She must've finished earlier and left. I went to go lay by the door of the cafeteria, waiting for Ruby to pass by and finish, noticing her still eating. I wanted to just talk to someone at this point...

I went to doze off with my thoughts, thinking about how Icy, Bubble, and Book were all doing back at home.

I refuse to call this place fucking home.

I refuse.

All this place is for me is somewhere where kids like me get tortured for thinking they were fucking special enough to be accepted in some super *fancy* school.

I fucking hate th-

"Pencil?" My train of thought broke as I looked over to the person speaking to me.

[4] Distasteful Reintroduction.

My line of thought had just been broken by someone calling my name, closeby apparently... I looked around, confusingly before I had my eyes focused on the girl calling me... Someone I am not.. So fond of.

Taco...

"..Hey." I bit my lip, putting my hands behind my back as I leaned against the wall of the cafeteria, wondering why she would come up to *me* out of everyone. "What do you need?" I was trying to stay calm. I've heard a lot of very bitter and terrible stuff about her, and hell, I don't like her. I had to work with her on a school project once and she hardly did her work... It was annoying.

"W-Well-!" She laughed nervously. "I just wanted to say hi and... Maybe make up for.. All that's happened over the last few years, yknow?" She smiled, clearly having good intentions... Which I will pass on. "..Hm. Not interested." I went to go move away, walking out of the cafeteria and hoping she didn't follow. Unfortunately, she decided to follow me and try to annoy me more. "W-Wait! Was the stuff I did *that bad*??" I scoffed, turning around. Was she really asking me this? Of course, the stuff she's done was bad! "Taco. Listen to me right now... Two of my *closest* friends in this shithole of a place are fucking dead and I do ***not*** need any more people to fucking ruin my life. Okay?!" I snapped, before turning around and walking off... I felt a little bad, but I hoped she wouldn't try to talk to me after that... I didn't need memories of what... Book did. The thought made me shiver. Hell, I think I changed after all of this death stuff. I never thought how bad stuff could get until recently. I always took my life for granted...

I looked down to the ground as I went to head for the fourth floor

once again to go hang out in one of the classrooms... Maybe find Ruby and chat with her. She's the last remaining sunshine in this place. Her smiles made me happy and I would honestly break if I lost her.

Hopefully, I don't...

I went to begin to climb the flight of stairs, humming to myself as I did. I mumbled to myself quietly, kinda missing my audience... Even if I hated them, at least I didn't feel completely lonely like I do right now. I mumbled to myself, trying to strike up some sort of conversation but it was lacking... I could use talking to someone like Ruby or someone that I didn't completely despise. I was on the third floor by now, a twinge of guilt hitting me as I hesitated before going past it and taking my next few steps up the stairs. I was finally on the fourth floor. I knew there was another, telling from the police tape covering the next stairs... I didn't want to risk death quite yet. I bit my lip as I went to begin looking around, going to open a few doors.

Most of them were empty, but I found 8-Ball writing something in what seems to be a journal in one of the rooms. I tilted my head but decided to close it and leave him be before he noticed me. I kept on walking.. I noticed the weightlifting room, hesitant.. I knew who was going to be there, and I didn't like them at all.

I growled a little before going to head to another floor, knowing there wasn't anyone to speak to. Stupid Taco... Stupid fucking game... What the hell was anyone thinking of hosting a goddamn killing game in a school??? I huffed angrily, going to go fish out my phone from my pocket. I gazed at it, the screen being a bit broken because it was old. I went to go swipe up, scrolling through my pictures again. It was nice to see it... Comforting in this place, at least. I was glued to looking at my memories, smiling a little until I had bumped into someone. I stumbled back, looking up confusingly to see who was there. "H-Huh-?" I quickly put my phone away as I focused my eyes on the person I had bumped to.

I had completely forgotten he was here jeez... "Balloony?" I looked at him as he seemed to be gathering a few items. "H-Huh? Oh! Hi Pencil." He gave an awkward smile, waving a little as he had a few things in his hands. I didn't know what to say. I hardly knew

Balloony and I have never really talked to him until now, so it was kinda off to me. I should probably actually talk to him and get to know him... "Hey. Uhh.. What are you up to?" I gave a small smile, watching him. "Nothing much... Just heading for the gym to go and get the air pump for these empty balloons." He showed off the multiple bags of deflated balloons, making me surprised he was even able to find something so on point with his talent here... "Cool. I'm just heading to my room." I stretched a bit, rubbing my eyes as I looked at him. He nodded, clearly a little uncomfortable with the sudden conversation we were having. "Right... Well, gottagocya!" He quickly said, hurrying up the stairs and leaving.

I raised an eyebrow as I went to go head downstairs for my room... I was tired and planned on taking a nap. It was noon right now, and I decided to skip lunch served at 1 for a good old sleep. I slowly went down the stairs, observing my surroundings. It was a boring old school... Despite that, the events taken here were.. Quite brutal. I didn't like the thought.

I went to head inside of my room, smiling to myself as I went to go into bed and straight to bed. I was tired of this.

---
hehe minor chapter~ i have a lot to do like plan the sequel to this book- (thats assuming there will be!~)

[4] Resurrection?

Morning. Once again.

I don't know what would be the thing that occurs today or what to do. Things feel like a waste of time. I thought about meeting up with Liy again like usual, and maybe have a nice conversation with Ruby about how we can stay alive together. I'm hoping that she lives, at least. I smiled to myself as I got out of bed, stretching a bit. I'm really tired... My body feels numb, but no big deal. I went to go wash my face and get dressed before heading out for breakfast.

Liy wasn't there. I was quite skeptical. I was practically praying she wasn't dead. I don't want any more of my goddamn friends dying because of how stupid some of the *OTHERS* in this school are. I put my hands in my pockets, going into the cafeteria to see everyone there for once. That's new. There were usually one or two people missing, so it was nice to see everyone here. It means that everyone here is also alive. I went to go and grab one of the lunch trays from the cafeteria, going to go and sit next to Liy who was eating and speaking to Dora. "Oh, hey Pencil!" She smiled once she had noticed me come by, myself waving back silently. I wasn't in the mood to talk, mostly after what happened after breakfast yesterday.

She didn't seem to mind though, which was great for me. I silently ate the pancakes that were out today and finished a glass of milk before standing and leaving right after. I didn't want to wait much, deciding to go and head for the arcade. I needed something to just waste the day on, and I want to get the trauma and what has happened off my mind.

So much had happened...

10 of us were left...

7 of us died.

All of them had with a horrible and tragic death under the mind of Monoroku.

I headed for the 3rd floor, going to go walk a bit... I tried to ignore the events that had happened on this very floor, going right for the arcade and going to go and play some of the games. They were modified so we can play it anytime, which was a relief. I spent most of the day playing some games in the arcade before I noticed someone else enter. I turned around, noticing Firey Jr standing there with a tired look on his face. He had walked by me, brushing right by me. He was still wearing *his* jacket... I hesitated, wanting to speak up or say something but I decided to keep quiet as I left to go and look for Ruby.

I went downstairs, noticing Ruby happily skipping around the halls. I rolled my eyes playfully, going to tap her on the shoulder to get her attention. She turned over to me, waving. "Oh, hey Pence-Pence!" She exclaimed, clearly happy to see me. I hesitated when she called me that nickname... Only Match called me that. But, it was nice to just see one of my childhood friends still with me here. "Hey, Ruby, what are you up to now?" I grinned a little, raising an eyebrow as she giggled a little. "Nothing much! Just bored walking around here, wanna talk or something?"

"Oh, yeah sure." I liked the idea of that... "Let's go to one of the classrooms." I didn't really want anyone else to eavesdrop on it, going to go and grab her hand as I went a bit into the hallway and hid in one of the classrooms. "Here we are. Let's just hang out here for a bit, kay?" I went to put my hands behind my back, leaning on the walls of the place as she nodded. "Sure! Well... Things have been pretty rough for you, right?" I knew just reading her expression she was clearly nervous talking about something like that. I nodded softly, looking to the side. I didn't know how she reacted to that, but she seemed a bit

frantic.

"W-Well... A-At least I'm still here.. Right? I promise I'll never leave your side!" She smiled.

...

Is she really going to promise me this.

"Ruby. I can't agree with your promise. I don't know if you're just going to die or not... We can't control how others act." Otherwise, I would've prevented *their* deaths... I would've done anything to keep them safe.

Hell, even ***kill first*** if it meant that.

She fidgeted a little as I went to go look back at her. "I know that. But, at least I can try my best! We're still friends, Pencil... I just want to see you happy!" She smiled. I was on the verge of tears...

She just wanted to see me happy?

Well... I can't be happy right now. I can't forgive Jr.. Or Roboty for killing them. Even if the latter is dead. How am I supposed to feel after everything? My life felt like it was spiraling downwards and each step is agonizing with the loss of the ones closest to me. She seemed to have noticed my hesitation, going to speak again. "Well... I don't know how to really help, but I want to try the best I can. I just wish I can see that smile back on your face and we can both be outside and happy together with Bubble, Book, Icy..." She smiled, putting out her hand as she slowly raised a finger and counted it as

she read out our friend's names. "*Match*... The point is that... We can't just give up now and stay upset forever! We'll have to work together to survive and support eachother!" She smiled cheerfully. "Like *friends* do. We're friends... Right?" I was hesitant to hear her. Just every word she said hit me hard... I don't know how to feel. I nodded, smiling weakly for her. "I-I know we are. Mmn... I'll have to talk to you later, Ruby... I think I'm gonna go and take a nap or something." She nodded. "Alright, bye Pencil!" She waved, going back to her optimistic spirit.

She was bound to die, wasn't she.

I'm never going to have anything good happen to me... So, I suppose I'll have to enjoy this while it's still there.

I don't know where I'll be without her.

I went to go leave the classroom, heading downstairs to go and head into my room... Well. I was going to until I heard Monoroku on the speakers. I swiftly turned around, looking up at wherever the noise was coming from. This wasn't good. This definitely wasn't. He coughed a bit, before saying what I was afraid of hearing.

"May everyone please head to the gymnasium for a special

announcement? Don't be late, OR ELSE!~" A laugh was heard from the speakers before it had turned off. I hesitated... I didn't know what this could mean. I was shaking a bit at the thought of having to accept this stupid killing game is still ongoing. Well, whatever it is... It probably requires everyone to be there. So I began to head for the gym, my hands in my pockets.

I wasn't that early, nor the latest. There were a handful in there, about a little less than half of us when I had come in. Monoroku was confidently standing there, waiting for all of us... He was staring down all of us, making me a little intimidated. Though, I had a feeling I knew what would escape his mouth. I don't know what words exactly but...

A new motive.

That was the reason why he had gathered us here today. I wasn't ready for whatever he had in mind, but it would most likely be even more tempting than the last few motives. Soon enough, everyone was there. Afraid. Nervous. Wary of whatever he was to say next. I felt the gazes of the other students on me, and everyone else. Although, just as I thought, the announcement was for a brand new motive. I was both relieved and upset. Relieved due to it being nothing new. Nothing unsettling... Nothing like a dead body announcement like last time. Upset because... Well, it's a motive and death is soon to come.

"Welcome back, students! You know the drill~ I have set up a brand new *motive* for you all, and it's a very worthy offer to consider because it will only go away in about 3 days!" He grinned, chuckling a bit. He seemed quite proud of whatever achievement he had done. I groaned a bit, hoping this wouldn't be too bad. Surely nothing could be that bad... Right...?

"I'm offering a revival. A *resurrection* to a lucky student who can manage to get away with a crime. Yes, you heard me right! You can ***REVIVE*** anyone who has participated in this killing game in the past and had died due to any cause!" He laughed, giving a sinister grin. "You may *escape* with WHOEVER *you revive as well*. So... You are all dismissed!"

I hesitated.

Oh no... Reviving a person isn't even possible! What type of voodoo scam is this!? I growled, going to turn around. I had a mental conflict. On one hand... I just really wanted Match back. Or even Leafy. So many of us had people we missed and we wanted back... But having to sacrifice someone just for that was horrible. It reminded me of Bracelety, even... I had my hands into fists as I left the gym, trying to understand everything.

Maybe I should take a nap. I'll just understand and process everything once I wake up again. Right. That sounds like a perfectly fine plan. I wanted to cry. I wanted to tear up and break down over the thought of possibly having my friends back. I just wanted them back... I miss them so much... So damn much... The offer's just waiting for me. Right there. I didn't know what to do... I'll have to fight the urge. I need to get over it. They're dead. That's it. I couldn't escape even if I tried, though...

I'll get over this urge.

Somehow. I went to go to my room, going to slam the door and lean against it... I was breathing heavily. Thoughts racing my head... I had so much to think about. I wasn't going to FUCKING kill someone for this. I'm not going to partake in this killing game even if it means I end up dying. NEVER. I will fucking LIVE in this game. I will save everyone somehow. I will find an escape. I will not give in to the temptations of this sickening game and motive. I went to stand, going to angrily punch the pillow. I needed to let out my anger somehow... I felt so sick...

I went to go turn off the lights, going to fall on the bed with my regular clothes still on as I softly decided to cry myself to sleep.

ALSO!!! THANK YOU SO MUCH FOR #1 ON THE BFB TAG. I'm really happy to have such a high ranking with a book I am fairly proud of!!

[4] Tension.

I woke up. It seemed like the afternoon as I slipped out of the bed, fixing up my clothing as it got wrinkled from my nap. I was so tired... I knew that this would be exactly the point on why we're in this game. For that sadistic asshole to make us feel pain. That's obviously what it was... I groaned, rubbing the back of my head as I went to go and leave my room silently.

I was afraid. I was scared of what awaited me once I left the room. Nothing seemed too off and it seemed like nobody had died in the first few hours. That was a relief. I was quite afraid, knowing that death could come at any second to myself or anyone else in the school. I went to go walk the halls, mostly keeping to myself. Everyone else seemed to be doing their own thing, as I went to head to the kitchen to see if anyone was there. To my expectation, Gelatin and Firey Jr were there. Gelatin was grinning and joking around about dark humor or whatever types of jokes he does for a living. Fj still seemed pretty tired and even ill. There were clear bags under his eyes, and he noticed me about instantly as I had silently walked in. He was watching me... Almost *observing* me for something. I wasn't quite sure what, as I quietly backed out from the nervewracking feeling. I smiled softly as I saw Loser and 8-Ball in the cafeteria talking, a little happy to see that things were okay for them... I kept on walking around, mostly to check on everyone and what sorta things were ongoing.

Ruby had ran up to me, annoying me about that *stupid song* she wouldn't stop singing and how I should go and listen to the other songs this guy made once we got out of here. That is if we even did. I wondered who this guy even was, and why she was so addicted to his songs. I might go listen to one or two someday, but I couldn't right now in the current situation at hand. I was so afraid for everyone. Even people like stupid Gelatin. I didn't want to see anyone hurt but knowing how everyone is... The tension will make sure someone

snaps and *murders*. I noticed Balloony trying to inflate some balloons in one of the hallways, sitting to himself. It seems like he didn't have anyone to talk to. Which was a shame, in a way. He seemed like a nice guy, but not my type of friend.

I kept on walking around, going to the second floor to see if either Dora or Liy was there. To my surprise... Both of them were. I thought Dora would be on edge to go on this floor due to the past events that had occurred. Although, my questions were soon answered as I had found them both in the Student Council meeting room. Mourning *his* death. She definitely hadn't gotten over it, as I watched her pitifully as she sobbed quietly with Liy comforting her. I was glad Liy was being such a nice friend. I knew that we would have to get over our friend's deaths and move on, but it's so hard when you knew them for who knows how long. It seemed a little worse for Dora. Her *brother* out of all people died, and they have known eachother for basically all of their lives. I went to go and sit down by her, patting her on the back as well. Liy noticed me come in, looking over and raising an eyebrow. I didn't respond as I wanted to comfort her. I just wanted her to be okay... I wanted everyone to be.

I would do anything to end this stupid game and keep them safe. Once and for all.

We stayed there for quite a while. Dora's eyes were all puffed up and red from the crying. She looked up at us, mumbling something under her breath and dragging us into a hug. "I-I miss him so much-" She sobbed, hiding into us. Liy sighed. "...I know you do.. It's hard to deal with loss." She softly said. I nodded in agreement. I knew things were going to be painful. Especially with this motive. "Dora... I don't know if you considered it before- fuck, I had.. But, please don't give in to the motive... We need to slowly get over his death.. I know it'll be hard. I know it's hard. We'll get through this together. Okay..?" I tried to reassure her, as she nodded and went to go hug me. "O-Okay." She whimpered from into me. I looked over to Liy, softly stroking her back.

The moment was heartbreaking... I knew I had to get over it. I just couldn't though. It's so hard to deal with losing the ones closest to us but that was what happened. I hated this game so much. I wanted out. I knew everyone did. The amount of despair and suffering we

had to experience from this stupid game... I don't know if I could even bear it. After a bit of hugging, I stood. I still held Dora closely.
"Do you want me to take you to your room.." I asked, feeling her nod as she still buried her head into me. I wanted her to be okay. Sorta like... How Ruby wanted me to be okay.
I guess I haven't been caring for myself that much. Liy went to go and help me take Dora back to her room, as we entered and plopped her down on the bed.
"Will you be okay without us?" Liy held her arms. I knew Dora was probably the closest friend she made while being here.
"I-I will." She smiled a little. Liy went to go and take my hand, nodding.
"Alright, we're gonna head off. See ya." She waved as we left.

Liy was shaking a bit. I could feel it in her hand as she held it. "It's getting late." She mumbled. "I'll take you to your room and see you tomorrow, okay?" She seemed to be telling herself this more than I... I wouldn't be surprised if so. She seemed really upset. She seemed really sad and upset to just have to take everything in. "..Alright." I mumbled as she went to go bring me to my room. She let go, the removal of contact made me a little sad as I waved as she waved back. There was a lot I wanted to do tomorrow... I wanted to maybe talk to some of the people I haven't done so much, maybe even consider remaking amends with Taco. Probably not, though. Well... I went to go take off my clothing and change into sleepwear as I comfortably washed my face and brushed my teeth. I'll see everyone *alive* tomorrow. That's what I hoped, at least.

[4] Counting the Days.

I woke up, tired... I was still really on edge with everything. I wasn't sure what was going to happen as I did the usual changing and washing myself up to head for the cafeteria. Mostly everyone seemed to be there... Which, I really hoped didn't mean one of us was dead. "Hey." I grinned a little as I went to go sit by Ruby. She seemed to be happily eating a massive stack of pancakes, which amazed me she could even eat that much. She looked over, her eyes widening happily. "Hoh! Hey Phwencil!" She said, it was a bit muffled because her mouth was full of food but I got the point. I laughed a bit. "Don't eat with your mouth full, silly."

She smiled innocently as she went to swallow the food she was chewing in her mouth. "Sorry!" She laughed too, going to playfully grab a forkful of food and stuff it in my own mouth. It surprised me but hey, we've known eachother for a few years now... I went to go swallow the pancakes and look back at her. "It's fine." I rolled my eyes as I looked at her. "So, what have you been up to?" She shrugged. "Nothing much! Just-" She went to go eat a small forkful and swallowed it about instantly. "Hanging out with some of the others!" She smiled happily.

I was glad to see her smile, as I leaned against the table using my hand to prop my head up. "That's good to hear..." I watched as she went to go finish up her pancake. She nodded, giving me a smile. "Yeah! Well.. Wait! I wanted to give you something." She went to go and take my hand, pulling me up with her as she began to lead me out of the cafeteria and for her room. I was a little curious on what she wanted to show me, as we entered into her room. She put me to sit on her bed, as I watched her with interest. She was getting something from her bedside drawer.

I wondered what she had for me...

Wait.

Oh no.

Please don't..

I don't think she would do that.

She doesn't have anyone she lost....

....

Ruby pulled out a bracelet from the bedside drawer, turning over and

showing me it. It was one of those loomed bracelets that you could put on your wrist... It made me have a sense of relief. "..What's this?" I was wondering how she even got one of those, or why she was giving me this. She gave me a optimistic smile. "It's a friendship bracelet!" She went to show it off. It had a red and orange pattern as she went to slip it on my hand. "We've been friends for years and... I don't really have anything jewlery-wise to give you. So! I hope this makes up for it." She smiled. I stared at it, hesitant. "..R-Really...?" I was surprised she would give me a gift. Even after all we've gone through...

"Yeah! Like it?"

"...Well.. Yeah, I do." I felt a little sense of hope.

Maybe there was a light... I just needed to look forward and hope for the best. For Ruby...

For Leafy...

For Match...

The thought made me happy. Even with all of the obstacles during the game and outside when I'm doing my usual career. I know I can do this. I went to go and stand, tearing up as I went to hug the smaller figure. "T-Thank you.." I mumbled. I felt like breaking down... I've been hiding my true feelings about everything. To myself... To her... I needed to open up more. I know trusting people and having to grow an attachment even when at any moment they can basically die right in front of your stupid eyes is a horrible idea but.

I just needed a sense of safety.

Someone to trust and befriend... Ruby rubbed my back, nodding. "..No biggie." I could feel a smile tugging at her face as we kept close to eachother... Everyone had been in such despair. We didn't know who to trust because at any moment they could kill or be killed. That was the point of the killing game, afterall. I went to part from the hug, gazing at her softly. "Ruby, you're a lifesaver." I nudged her as I went to stand. "Anyways, I'm going to go and head off. Stay safe for me, okay?" I went to go and give her a small kiss on the cheek, just to make her feel a little happier as I left her room. That was nice...

I left to go and do a headcount to make sure everyone was alive. Ever since losing those two and having this new motive... I knew a death was bound to occur. I wasn't sure when, though. Gelatin, Firey Jr, and Taco were all in the kitchen doing their own thing. Jr seemed really on edge still and despite Taco clearly stealing his favorite cans of soda... He didn't even say anything about it. I was really skeptical. Loser seemed to be in the library with Dora, probably talking about one of his own books or something. He sorta had a huge ego from what I've gathered about the author... I wouldn't be surprised. 8-Ball was in one of the classrooms, reading to himself as he was propped up against the wall. I decided to not question it.

Balloony was in the hallway and he passed by me as he seemed to be making his way to the kitchen. It seemed to be a pretty popular spot for everyone... I was wondering where Liy was, looking around and everywhere for her. I wasn't sure where she was... After all of my

attempts, I decided to head for her room and knock on it.

I waited, smiling as I saw her open the door... The thing was.. She seemed really tired. There were obvious bags under her eyes and she seemed to be really tired... She was gripping the door knob fairly tightly, looking up at me. "..Oh, hey Pencil.." She yawned a bit, rubbing her eye a bit. "L-Liy! What the hell??" I was a little judgemental of her appearance. I had no idea why she looked like a complete mess. "Huh- Oh... I've been working on trying to figure out a few things.." She mumbled. I raised an eyebrow.

"When did you even last sleep...?"

"Four days ago."

My jaw dropped a bit from the thought. "Liy! You're *killing* yourself by doing that... You need your sleep.." I worriedly said. "I-I don't know what you've been working on but you shouldn't be staying awake for so long." I mean... I did used to stay awake until midnight. This was different though. "...I guess... I just don't want to be killed in my sleep.." She tiredly yawned.

"What? Why would-"

"People are fucking insane in this place, Pencil. I'm not risking it." She grabbed me by the jacket as she pulled me close to her. "I've been trying to figure out what the fuck has been up with this place and I need to stay up incase I die." She stated, staring at me. "I'm capable and I'll be just fine."

"...Liy.."

"Just leave me alone." Liy pushed me away before shutting the door on me, surprising me as I went to hold my arms. I had no idea what was up with her... I was a little on edge. I hope she wasn't planning anything too dark.. I went to go and head off.. It was around 6, and I was getting a little worn from all of the walking. I sorta needed some sleep to catch so...

I went to head to my room for bed. Like usual. It was hard to ignore everything but I needed to honestly stop overreacting.. Things will be fine tomorrow.

Right?

[4] Fatal Rest.

It was morning.

I had no idea what was going to happen today. The motive was hanging over my head and I was feeling shaky from it... I went to stand, going to head for the cafeteria after getting dressed. I noticed people there. Ruby waved happily at me, as I looked over. "Hey! Pencey! Wanna get some snacks?" She got up, going to go and hug me. I made a soft squeak, nodding, and giving a thumbs-up as we began to head there. Things seemed particular about the scene, though. There was... Broken glass near the fridge. I squinted at it but decided to brush it off as nothing as I knew some people here were clumsy. "What do we have?" I asked her, trying to avoid stepping into the glass as she went to look in the cupboards.

"We have chips, dried ramen, ooh! Cookies!" She exclaimed, grabbing the items she said out of the cupboard as I took out two soda cans for the both of us. "Buncha junk food, huh?" I grinned a little. "Yep! The perfect food for usss!" She smiled, going to open one of the bags of chips and hand me it. "Right, let's go eat at the actual tables." I replied, going to grab the junk food and begin walking back with her to the tables. I noticed a handful of people there, Liy was keeping to herself, tinkering with the computer she had shown me the other day. 8-Ball was reading a book while drinking some coffee while Loser was happily eating a stack of pancakes. Taco wasn't present, which made me quite suspicious of her. I was still really worried about Liy, though...

I decided to not say anything as I went to begin eating the snacks with Ruby, talking about a lot of stuff. We both knew we were trying to avoid even speaking about the game... Neither of us knew. Or even wanted to be here. Everyone here was great and cool and all.. But.. The situation we were all in was a terrible thing. I wished I stayed home. At least my fans were a little tolerable... "So!-" My thought was

broken from Ruby speaking up after we ate. Her words were muffled because her mouth was full of food. "What do you thinkk Book and Icy are doing right noww?" She asked. "One, don't talk with your mouth full." I replied. "Two, I think they're just probably thinking about us..." I hesitated. I probably said the wrong thing, myself realizing that once it came out of my mouth. Ruby noticed my hesitation, nodding. She gulped the food in her mouth, nodding. "..Yeah, probably." I looked around, noticing a handful of people missing.

"Hey wait-"

"Huh?"

"Where even is everyone..? There's like so many people missing." I mumbled. I was getting a little worried... "Dunno! Wanna check out what's going on?" I nodded, before noticing Jr and Taco come in. He didn't say anything, quickly sitting down and looking away from everyone while Taco went to head into the kitchen. I raised an eyebrow at the sight of them, not commenting. Breakfast was nearly over so... I wondered where those other two were. We kept on eating and talking casually before we noticed Gelatin come in. He was still in his sleeping clothes, yawning. "Ahhh... Morning!" He cheerfully said, waving at everyone as he went to sit down. Everyone looked over to him. Breakfast was about over but there was no sign of Balloony...

Wait.

That's really weird. Everyone else but him is here.. I went to go look around. "Hey uh- Have any of you guys seen Balloony? He usually does take breakfast, right?" I spoke up, putting my hand up to hopefully get the attention of the others. 8-Ball looked up from his book, taking a good look around before nodding softly. "Yeah.." He murmured. Loser smiled. "Maybe he's oversleeping?"

"Stupid, he wouldn't sleep for that fucking long." Jr snapped back, growling a little as he was leaning back on the chair he was sitting on, his bare arms exposed as he crossed them. I raised an eyebrow, looking over to Ruby as she was still eating the chips. "Mmmmm.. Mmaybe we should go and see if he's in his room?" She asked. Dora

nodded. "A-Alright.. I'll go... Anyone else want to come?" She softly asked, rubbing the back of her head as she observed everyone. I got up. "I'll come." Loser put his hand up, as Jr growled and stood up as well. "Hey, maybe we should all fuckin' go. Maybe we might not get brutally murdered or something if we do." He growled, clearly being snappy. I rolled my eyes. "Alright. Fine. Come on everyone." I'm known for being a really good leader back in my school. I was the Captain Cheerleader at one point but I quit so I'd have more time to do my true passion: vlogging.

Everyone had their own reaction as we all began to make our way to Balloony's dorm. It was odd, really. We hardly did anything as a collective group.. Maybe because of the situation. There weren't so many people. About half of us were dead now. The other half? Still surviving...

We just needed to see if it was 10 people alive or 9.

We made our way slowly to the dormitory hallway, everyone silent as they walked. It was so quiet that we could hear our footsteps and even a mouse squeaking around if there ever would be one. I was in front of the entire group, going over to where Balloony's room was. The door was slightly open, so pushing it a bit to reveal what was inside was easy.

I wish I didn't.

Why...

Balloony's dead corpse laid there, his body just laying on the bed. The covers were roughly covering him up and his arm was just hanging on the edge. His head seemed to be completely crushed and twisted in an inhumane way. There was a dumbbell right by the bed, covered in the blood of it's victim. The sight horrified all of us, making us take a step back.

We all looked at eachother. Before anyone could say a word, all of our PDA's began ringing. I went to take mine out while everyone else piled onto me, staring at the small screen as it began to show Monoroku just standing there with a sadistic smile, his hands behind his back. "A body has been discovered!" He grinned. "You know the drill by now, students! But if you're the forgetful type, here we go! You will have some free time right after the body is discovered. Which, you may use for anything! A class trial will be held. You all must report into the trial room ASAP as soon as you hear my announcement, if not.. You'll be... Let's say, PUNISHED! Now, ta ta!" He laughed as the PDA's turned off.

We were all baffled, confused.

Dora began to break down into tears, hiding in Liy. None of us were even that close to Balloony...

That must've made him the perfect victim. None of us really cared for him...

I felt really bad now. I went to proceed walking inside, looking around. "I'm staying here for investigation. I don't care what you guys do." It was my job now... I made it like that. Dora nodded. "I-I'll help." She mumbled weakly as everyone else began to go and do their own thing. I'm assuming finishing breakfast or something. I noticed Ruby staying, going over. "Lemme help too! I wanna help the best I can this time." She smiled. I'm fairly certain it was just so that she could give me company and... I can understand that. I kinda needed it anyway. I hesitated as I began to approach his dead body, not knowing how to feel or how to even process it.

He was completely fucked over.

His face was completely bloodied, in a shape I can't even describe. He must've been hit by the dumbbell.. That must've been the weapon. Right? Ruby covered her mouth a bit, in a position where it looked like she was about to puke. "This is gross.... Who would even do this..?" She murmured weakly. She clearly hated the sight, and I don't blame her.

Dora looked around the room a bit, turning back to us. "C-Clearly someone among us." She held her arms a bit, a little uncomfortable with even seeing the body. "The place seems pretty neat... No struggle, I think.." She responded.

I nodded. "Right."

I went to go and see how bad the wound was, noticing how badly the neck was cracked. It seemed like the neck was snapped to a horrifying point. I wanted to gag. This was one of the worst bodies I've seen yet... "You guys find anything that could help?" I questioned.

Ruby smiled. "Wait! Let me try something." She went to go and touch right where the wound was on the head, going to move it to her mouth and lick a bit off of her finger. She quickly gagged, going to go over to the nearest trashcan to puke at it. I cringed a bit, looking away. WHY WOULD YOU DO THAT...

Dora winced as she puked, as she went to raise up from the trashcan afterward. "Wait.. The blood's wet." She looked over. "That's really new." She commented, raising up. "This murder happened recently!" She pointed her bloody finger up, making the both of us perk up, and looked over.

"Recently?- But.. It's only 11! There's no way anyone would've had time to murder in less than 3 hours!" Dora exclaimed. That didn't seem right... I felt a little skeptical.

"If so... It must've been someone who came in much later. We need to question Gelatin, Taco, and Jr." I explained to them.

"We can during the trial??" Ruby suggested.

"Wait.. If that's fresh and there would be about no time to do the murder.. What killed Balloony?" She questioned, putting her hand up to her chin. That was actually a good question. I wasn't too sure, looking back at his corpse... It seemed fairly easy, though.

"His neck's fucked to the extreme. I think he was killed from that." I stated. I think that would be the case if the blood was really dry...

Also who the hell would add salt to the wound like that.

The room seemed fairly clean just from a good look around, and seeing the body and the bedsheets covered over him so messily was off. I highly doubted Balloony moved *that* much to cause so many wrinkles within the blanket. Maybe the murder wasn't even done here and was moved! I felt like that would be something to express to the others. I went to turn to them, about to say something before our PDA's began to beep once again. Shit.

We hardly had any time... It was probably because Monoroku was purposely making this much more harder. I bit my lip, watching as Dora took out her PDA and showed us the screen. She looked away, a little upset as it was Monoroku once again. "Time is up!" He grinned. "Now, all you gotta do is head into the trial room. Where our fourth class trial will be held! I will explain the rules once ***all 9 students*** arrive. So, be on time! OR ELSE." He waved as it turned off.

"...It's time." Dora mumbled. She went to grab both of our hands. "..Are we really ready for this..?" I was hesitant, not knowing how to respond. I wasn't sure if we were. This was so much more harder now. I just hoped the others actually did something to help or this really wouldn't be good. "I think we are!" Ruby tried to give a reassuring smile, looking at both of us.

"..Alright then."

"Let's go."

[4] Fourth Case.

Ruby, Dora, and I began to make our way to the trial room. Not many words were exchanged because we were all nervous. Just trying to take in the fact that Balloony had died and one of the others had snapped just like the past three and murdered... It was a little terrifying. I was shaking a little, glancing over to the other two as we had entered the courtroom.

Everyone was there. We were the last to arrive as everyone was skeptical and looking away from each other. We knew it was time. We knew it was time, once again. I didn't want to do this again. I didn't want to have to take in that another person had died because of one of us. I went to my podium, looking around a bit and uncomfortably avoiding looking at Taco as she stood by me. I knew I had to just face forward... I didn't want to acknowledge it. I didn't want to acknowledge *her* death. Even if I tried.. The person who was across from me was where Match's podium would've been. A stand with a frame containing her photo smeared in blood took the place of where she belonged to never see any of us again. I teared up a bit, trying to not break down in front of everyone as I waited for the cue. Monoroku was grinning sadistically, observing all of our expressions as he was sitting at the judge's bench. "Welcome back, students! Getting used to this?" He chuckled a bit.

"Now, let me explain the rules in case anyone had forgotten! One of you murdered dear Balloony, with a snap to the neck! They are the blackened... Now the rest of their classmates need to find out who it is. If you do~ The blackened will be punished! But.. If you fail.. Let's just say.. Everyone but the blackened will be punished, and the blackened will go on to graduate and to go back out free in the world alongside the wish! Now.. Have fun, and may the trial begin!"

He hit the gavel down, announcing to all of us it was time to begin the trial. I was nervous, as I stared up at everyone else.

-- WHO KILLED **BALLOONY**? --

Silence.

Everyone was giving each other nervous glances, trying to figure out who should speak up first to begin.

Firey Jr rolled his eyes, scowling a bit.

"Are we going to begin this or what?" He spat.

Gelatin giggled. "Of course, stupid!" He went to cover his mouth, putting his hands behind his back. "So! Let's talk about the scene of the crime." He started.

"Well, yeah..." Taco rubbed the back of her head, biting her lip. "Where even was it done?"

"W-Well... It appears as if it was done in his room. With that dumbbell on the floor, correct?" He looked over to me, knowing that we were the ones who investigated the crime.

I was about to speak until...

"Wait." Liy quickly interrupted. "That's not right."

"Huh?" 8-Ball looked over. "And why is that?" He raised an eyebrow, putting his hands in his pocket as he was suspicious of Liy.

"Monoroku said something. Something very important."

He did?

Wait.

"And what may THAT be?" Jr asked.

Liy gave everyone a look. "Are you all really that stupid... He just said it!" She spat.

I hesitated, trying to recall what had Monoroku just said seconds before realizing what Liy was referring to. "Balloony wasn't killed by the dumbbell." I announced.

"W-What? What killed him..?" Loser glanced away, a little embarrassed.

Dora looked over to Liy, seemingly a little relieved. "Somebody *snapped his neck*. While Pencil, Ruby, and I went to investigate, we decided to see what happened to the body. His neck was mangled."

Ruby nodded. "Yeah! I tasted his blood.. It was wet!"

"Ew, why the fuck??" Firey Jr glared at Ruby, making a gagging noise.

Ruby shrugged a bit.

8-Ball was visibly disgusted. "Right.." He mumbled tiredly. "But it was still in the bedroom, right.."

"I don't really think so-" Taco awkwardly said, playing with her hands.

"Why is that?"

"W-WELL!" Taco huffed, crossing his arms. "We discovered the body later in the morning so the culprit would have to find a way to unlock his door as soon as they were allowed to leave their room to have killed Balloony right in bed!" She stated.

"Oh yeah.. I woke up and got out of my room as soon as I was allowed to! I would've seen them instantly." Ruby smiled. "So when was the death?"

"H-Had to be somewhere yesterday." Loser timidly said.

Firey Jr nodded. "Well, fucking obviously! We all saw Balloony the day before and he was present at breakfast."

"Do you think he died in the afternoon then?" Dora puzzled.

"No." I firmly said. "Balloony was seen heading to the kitchen when I was making sure everyone was alive."

Liy put her hand up to her chin, thinking. "So... He couldn't have died in the morning since he was at breakfast, nor in the afternoon because Pencil had seen him heading for the kitchen.." She growled. "Evening." She finally concluded. "He was killed later in the evening... Was anyone in the kitchen by any chance during that time?"

"Why the kitchen.." 8-Ball squinted.

Dora bit her lip. "Are you implying that the murder might've happened there?"

"..Yes."

Everyone looked at her, a little confused. I had no clue why she thought it would be in the kitchen out of all places... Wait... I think I'm missing something.

"Heyyy... Are you referring to the shattered glass?" Gelatin questioned, leaning onto his podium and gazing softly at her.

OH!

I think I got it...

"Do you think that glass was Balloony's..?" I nervously asked. "I-I thought it was like... Jr's or something."

"HEY!"

"Well... Everyone can confirm they didn't drop that glass, right?" Dora asked. She looked over at everyone else, waiting for a response as everyone did their indicator.

"Didn't drop anything." Liy stated. "So that confirms it."

I was still trying to process anything, a little relieved Liy was helping.

Ruby nodded. "So wait! The culprit *dragged* from the kitchen to the dorms? That's quite a long way..." She pointed out.

"Oh, yeah. That does make sense... Then what about the dumbbell?" 8-Ball pointed out.

Loser looked over. "I-I think it was supposed to just be rubbing salt in the wound... But if it's new then.."

"The murderer *revisited* the body in the morning." I concluded.

"So... That leaves us with 3 people." Dora looked over to the three she was referring to... Firey Jr, Taco, and Gelatin...

Taco jumped a bit. "Woaahh there... Just because I didn't come right away to breakfast doesn't mean you can accuse me!" She looked over at everyone. "I was out playing a few games at the arcade before I got

hungry."

I raised an eyebrow. "Sureeee...." I wouldn't be that upset if it was Taco, to be honest. She's been like that before... So dishonest.. Can't believe she used my friend Book like that.

"I swear I'm not lying! I even have some arcade coins in my pocket to prove it!" She took out one of those small cups you'd see at an arcade to hold coins, shaking it a bit to prove there were some as she put it back in her pocket. "It's not me."

Firey Jr growled. "I overslept." He plainly said, rubbing his eyes.

"I did too! Wow, Jr., We have so much alike.." He looked over to him, as Jr glared at him.

"Shut the fuck up!"

8-Ball huffed. "Well, it probably is one of you two... Everyone else was at the cafeteria and has an alibi backed up by everyone else." He looked to the side.

"Hey wait. I've been meaning to ask."

Everyone looked over. What?

"Say Jr..." Liy smirked. "Where's *his* jacket?"

I looked over, surprised... I had just realized as well. Firey Jr was in the courtroom without the jacket of his best friend on him. It was the first I've seen his bare arms due to his tank top not having any sleeves.

"Erm, who?" Jr glared. "I don't know what the fuck you're talking about."

Ruby nodded. "Yeah!! Roboty's, right?"

Everyone quieted down. Disturbed by the name. I gave a small look over to Ruby, trying to tell her to ***NEVER*** say his name. I despised that fucking monster... The one who killed the both of them...

"Ohhh.. His." He huffed. "It was getting too warm around here, I needed to take it off."

Gelatin smiled innocently. "Warm??? It's been the same temperature all this time, Jr... Have you really forgotten?" He put his finger to his own cheek. "Or did our little *murderer* fail to make a good excuse?"

I hesitated. Fuck...

It really was him.

He was sweating a little, gripping his podium tightly. "M-MURDERER?? ARE YOU FUCKING SERIOUS?" He spat. "I wouldn't ever kill after what happened! I just wanted to take it off, is it a big fucking deal??"

Loser hesitated. "..W-Well." He looked to the side. "He was really close to you.."

"You also have the strength to snap someone's neck. Especially someone taller than you." 8-Ball pointed out.

Everything was adding up towards him. It really was clear...

"So let me get this straight.." Dora bit her lip. "You decided to kill Balloony for assumingly the motive by snapping his neck yesterday evening in the kitchen?" She began.

I nodded, going to continue. "He wanted to revive *him*." I glared. "Firey Jr had dragged Balloony to the bedroom, trying to hide the fact he was the one behind it due to him being the Ultimate Weightlifter by crushing his head with a dumbbell in the morning," I concluded. "Not a very good cover-up. Was it.."

"For FUCKS sake! It's not me!" Firey Jr was getting a little defensive, whimpering and wiping his eyes a bit. He was getting emotional and I wasn't sure if it was because of the name of his friend being mentioned or him being caught red-handed.

"Awhh... Is the little baby crying noww??" Gelatin giggled, wincing as Taco nudged him angrily. "Well, we all clearly know who it is now. Hm?" He messed with his bowtie and suspenders, smiling.

"..R-Right.." Loser looked away.

I felt really bad. I knew I couldn't do anything about it because if we don't vote for him, who was likely the culprit... We would all die. "Hm? Done already?" Monoroku looked over. "What a shame.." He went to stand, going to put his hands behind his back. "Oh well, anyhow! Everyone take out your PDA's and select who **YOU** think is the blackened." He announced as everyone slowly began to pull out their individual PDA's.

8 names were gone.

Crossed out.

I didn't want to look at their individual names, biting my lip as I voted for who I truly believed was the blackened. It was the only reasonable explanation. After a few seconds, I had put away my PDA and noticed everyone else had as well. The sight of a slot machine closeby began to make noise, beginning to roll as it was slowly going to land on the objects representing each of us...

Soon...

Soon enough, as I had suspected...

It had landed on a small flame, a loud noise as we were all familiar with. Success. We had all voted successfully... And... It was Firey Jr. It really had to be...

-- **FIREY JR.** HAS BEEN FOUND GUILTY . TIME FOR PUNISHMENT ! --

Firey Jr teared up, whining. "...I-I can't believe you guys.. You fucking killed him..." He looked down, knowing it was his time. He covered his face using his arms as the podium underneath him fell into the hole as all of the others had before him. I felt a twinge of guilt, frowning and looking up tiredly to the monitor that had played the executions time after time.

He was prompted in an arena-like area. He looked around fearfully as

he held his arms and was visibly shaken. He was scared. He didn't know what awaited him as he flinched and noticed Monoroku standing by him in a referee-like outfit. He smiled, grabbing a whistle. "All you need to do to survive is to simply do 6 pushups. Sound easy enough, hm?" Firey Jr looked over. "W-What? That's it?" He felt a little relieved, grinning. "I can do that." He went to go fish something in his pocket, holding it before beginning to get into position, staring down.

Monoroku smirked. "Alright.. Go!"

The following words appeared as a faint voice spoke it...

SPARKLING WITH ANGER! LIFTING UP SIX TONS!

Firey Jr felt confident. He felt like he'd be safe with such a simple task... He's done so many before. 20. 30... Even 100 at one point. He didn't struggle with such a thing despite his tiny body. He began to lower himself, going to quickly push himself up afterward as he knew he just had 5 more to go. He looked down, noticing his arms now stuff in cuffs. No big deal... Right?

He squirmed a bit, feeling a bit of struggle on him as he noticed a much larger shadow on him. "W-What the fuck?? What are you doing!?" He spat at him, wincing as he slowly lowered himself. The things weighing him down were metal beams, slowly being stacked on him one by one as he did each pushup. He was hesitating each time, wishing he hadn't underestimated what Monoroku was capable of.

He was shaking by the third one, panting harshly as 3 tons of metal beams were on top of him. He winced as he slowly lifted himself even with the harsh conditions, feeling a sense of relief as he soon felt another beam of metal ontop.

He didn't know if he'd survive.

He was fucking terrified.

He whimpered as he felt the pressure going on. He knew there were two more.. He was over halfway. He grunted a bit as he lowered down. His arms were visibly shaky and he really felt like giving in. His arms felt so sore. He felt so much pain in his body with the weight..

Of both guilt and the tons of weight stacking on him.

He grinned to himself as he managed to do the fifth pushup, knowing there would be one last one and being able to possibly survive. He looked up a bit, feeling a relief of confidence. He knew he would be safe... But... Instead of seeing the sense of safety, he had so wanted. Instead of seeing life.. He saw death. His eyes widened as he realized something was coming down on him. A massive boulder...

Just like the one who had crushed Roboty.

He cried out. "W-WAIT!" He screamed, trying to squirm out of the cuffs and tons of weight holding him in his position as he collapsed... The boulder following shortly after as Monoroku stood by him as it barely missed him, crushing Firey Jr instantly as a muffled scream was heard before silence. Everything was quiet... He was dead...

What had hurt the most was the thing he had kept in his pocket right until his death.

A bloody piece of cloth from Roboty, seemingly during the time he wore it.

The monitor shut off shortly after, the sounds of insane laughs from Monoroku being the last thing we heard on screen. I hesitated.. Just hearing his confidence being crushed.. Literally. It hurt me so badly because of the similar conditions we were both in. I looked away, wiping my silent tears as I went to back away from my podium and leave first. I had so much to process.... I just wanted to stay in my room...

I wanted to hurt myself.

I can't bear living in this world where everyone fucking hurt each other like this.

He did this.

I wanted to blame someone so badly, shaking as I ran back for my dorm. Things were getting so much more worse. I didn't want to know what was planned next. I didn't want to see anyone else's reaction. I just wanted everyone to be okay. I just wished this was a joke. I wished this was a dream... But I knew. I just knew...

It wasn't.

CHAPTER 4 | END.
8 OUT OF 17 REMAIN.

---

woo new art!! im probably gonna redraw some stuff and rewrite stapy's execution it sucks i swea

[5] Harmless Activity.

I leaned against the door of my dorm, groaning. I couldn't believe this. I felt like I was in a really bad situation, knowing how *Jr* out of all people had the most similar situation as me. He lost people. He lost people close to him around the same time I had and he had resorted to *murder* to avenge him. The thought disgusted me but it was not a new concept in this horrifying place. I went to get up, knowing it was still about the later afternoon. I decided to spend the entire evening and night in my room, pacing around and thinking to myself.

I had a lot to think about...

All of them.

All of their deaths...

My friends at home...

The person who had set us up to do this to eachother...

The people I called my "family."

All of it was taken away.

Gone.

For who knows how long.

I jumped a bit as I had realized I had fallen asleep on my bed late at night. I rubbed my eyes a bit, looking around as my body felt numb like it usually did when you would be waking up. I tried to shake it off, going to get up and tiredly do my typical routine and heading for the kitchen. I don't know who was around or who was there, my vision blinded by this guilt.

I had so much.

I grumbled to myself as I went to open my soda and take a drink from it, only hearing silence. It bothered me so much.. I took a deep breath as I suddenly heard somebody. "Huh? Oh, hey Pencil!" I jumped a little, turning over to who it was... Oh. Taco. I raised my eyebrow, frowning and going to finish my drink before crushing the can and throwing it towards the trashcan, not looking to see if it had landed. "Hey." I weakly said, not minding her presence. I just needed someone to talk to..

"You alright? You've been kinda lookin' gloomy lately." She pointed out, going to drink the can she always had stolen from *him*.. Fuck I can't stop thinking about it. The unbearable feeling of having to hear his screams as he had held onto the remains of his best friend and

knowing he'd join him. It felt like my fault... All of it was. I was shaking a bit, hesitating before being interrupted again.

"..I-I don't know if you want me here.. I can go if you want-" She awkwardly said.

"N-NO! It's alright."

"...You sure..??"

"...Y-Yeah."

I looked to the side, holding my arm a bit. "Well.." I huffed. "It's better than being lonely during this." I decided it wasn't that big of a deal that she was there for now. She'd probably leave me eventually anyway. "Hm? Oh, yeah... I'm still sorry about that." She rubbed the back of her head. "I-I know you probably hate me or something but.. I do want to make up for it somehow. We're sorta stuck with the same problem now, righhttt?" She nudged me a little playfully, trying to be a little lighthearted. I chuckled a bit, nodding.

"..Mhm.."

"So! Wait, have you checked out the new floor? The place seems sorta neat." She pointed out, changing the topic. "I haven't seen much but I heard that it's basically just one new room."

I raised an eyebrow. "Oh, no I haven't." I was a little intrigued, not minding going with Taco to go and check it out. I mean, to be honest, I was going to eventually I wasn't going to completely avoid it... Certainly, if it meant perhaps preventing a death. The thought sounded nice... "I could go and check it out with ya if you want?" I grinned at her a bit.

"Huh? Oh, I mean.. I don't have anything else to do soooo.." She smirked a little at me as she went to grab my hand and began to escort me towards the staircase for the new floor. She seemed a little excited for whatever reason. I assumed it was because she was exploring a new place but I had a small suspicion that the reason might be something different. I smiled a little over the thought of being wanted.. It sounded nice. Once we climbed multiple flights of

stairs to reach our destination, Taco had let go of my hand. "Come on.." She went to look around a bit, seemingly curious as I put my hands in my pockets and followed after her.

I gasped in surprise as we had entered what seemed to be a stage of sorts. It wasn't as big as the auditorium but there was a stage. "Woah. What is this place?" I tilted my head a little as I went to go and look around. Chairs were surrounding the stage for assumingly audience members. The stage was decked with lights and curtains with cardboard objects placed onto the stage to play as set pieces. I went to go and climb onto the stage where Taco was looking around.

"Hey! I see a backroom to this place!" She called back to me. I was curious as I went to walk over to her and notice the area behind the flat set. "Ooh.." I was really curious, surprised as I saw an entire place that looked to be a place for actors to prepare for their shoots. "This looks amazing.." I commented. Taco looked over to me, nodding. "I know right?! This must be the drama club room.."

"Drama club?? Hm.. I suppose they're definitely would've been lots of students attending the school before we got here. I mean, how else would the school get its popularity?" I questioned out loud, Taco shrugging a bit in response. "Dunno.. Seems kinda weird that this is basically the only room for a club here.." She smiled a little. "But! This means that maybe we could do something fun with these~" I looked over to her curiously to see what she meant, surprised as she took a few clothes with its hangers from a nearby dressing rack.

"Oh! We have to so like, show everyone else this." I put my hand on my hip, pretty relieved and excited for today. Maybe hanging with the other students might not be so bad.. We might be able to do something fun here! Oh, that sounds really fun thinking about it. I went to begin walking out of the room and heading down for the cafeteria where I was sure everyone left alive would be. Not to my surprise, they were.

Everyone there was doing their own thing, eating food, talking with any of their still surviving friends, or just a combination of a few of those things. Taco was right by my side, looking around. "Hey everyone! We have something to say." She smiled, speaking out loudly. I glanced over to her, a little surprised as everyone stopped

what they were doing to go look over. I rubbed the back of my head, a little hesitant as I watched all of their eyes land on me. It scared me a little but I was used to having everyone look at me for things.

"Well.."

"I don't know if any of you had explored the new floor opened but.. I and Taco checked it out a bit." I said as I began to bring her to the table that everyone had sat at. It was a long table similar to the long ones you'd see at thanksgiving. "Huh? Oh. I've noticed the new floor open but I haven't really checked it out yet." Dora spoke, messing with her backpack. "Is there anything new or??"

"Yeah! There's this awesome new stage and stuff that we could mess around with!"

"I-Isn't that just the auditorium?" Loser asked, leaning back on his chair a bit and nuzzling into his large, oversized leather jacket.

"No. It's not as big.. It's for us." I grinned. "It's a room for a drama club.. I mean, there's none here because there's.." I hesitated as I quietly did a quick headcount. "eight of us." I rubbed the back of my head, feeling awkward about it.

8-Ball raised an eyebrow, "That number doesn't exactly mean much right now, but a drama club?" He seemed interested.

"Hehe... That sounds super fun!! Maybe we could do our own plays or something!" Gelatin giggled, who had just come out from the kitchen and was eating a snack. "Oooh.. We could do a murder mystery play! Doesn't that sound fun everyone~?" I wish that was what we were doing all this time sometimes.. I didn't say that out loud, though, not wanting to make the situation more dimmer than it already was.

"Doing a play sounds super fun!! Maybe we could make our own for fun somedayy??" Ruby leaned a bit on her arm, pretty excited over the thought.

"I like the idea.."

"Y-Yeah.. It certainly sounds nice.."

"That sounds great!!"

"Then it's settled!" Taco confidently said. She messed with her glasses a bit, putting her hands on her hips. "We should figure it out someday, maybe not today but.. We could have so much fun doing things like a class!" She exclaimed.

I gave a weak smile at everyone. "Yeah... Well, I'm probably gonna head off to do my own thing now." I waved a little, giving a small glance towards Liy. She hadn't spoken this entire time, facing away from everyone and just eating a small energy bar. I'm worried for her.. She did a complete 180 ever since she learned what her supposed talent may be... That was one of our last conversations before she changed. I hope she's okay. I really do.

I went to turn away and walk away from the cafeteria, going to go to another floor to do my own thing.

[5] Looking Forward.

I was quiet, biting my lip as I walked up to the third floor of the school. I didn't mutter anything, focused on a singular thing. I took out my phone, gazing softly at it. I missed her so much. Her optimistic voice.. Everything about her. I groaned a little as I slowly went to walk for the nurse's office, blankly looking forward as I looked over to the bed where I remembered my poor friend who had passed away had laid. The body wasn't there anymore, shakingly, I went to go and get down on my knees in front of the bed and put down my phone.

The screen displayed a video, not having yet played as I hesitantly went to play it. I watched it lifelessly, not saying a word as I was on the verge of tears. I wanted to pay my respects and apologize for everything. Her death was my fault.

The video soon played, it was a short video of all of us. We were smiling and happy as we were hanging out at an amusement park, joking around. I was recording us in a selfie form, my arm wrapped around Match on the screen as we were all grinning and smiling. "Come on! We gotta go before like, the line gets too long!" Match called out, as the video was really shaky due to me holding it while running. We were all laughing, happy. "I roilly would loive to have some cotton coindy!" Bubble happily said, close to Ice Cube and Ruby as we were all walking after reaching the concession stands. I nodded in the video, "Yeah sure, I'll pay. Lemme just end thi-" The video shortly ended as I looked back to the screen.. I looked back at my past self.. My happier self.

I took everything for granted.

I really wish I didn't. I wiped my tears, groaning a little in pain. I felt so much guilt.. I don't even know how Bubble, Icy, and Book are now.. All I know is that Match's dead because of me and Ruby is still

alive.. But I don't even know how long she'd last now. I felt so vulnerable, gazing down as I felt tears stream down my cheeks. I wished things were different...

I wish it was me instead.

Match didn't deserve it. Nor did Leafy.

...Or David..

..Or Spongy.

None of them.

I slammed my hand down on the floor, crying out in agony as I felt the emotional pain. It felt like it was ripping me into bits, just laughing at my suffering and despair. I moved my hands to my face, covering my face as I felt tears dripping down like crazy. I didn't know what to do or say... It felt like I'd be here crying about her forever. I'm relieved I found that charger in my room, but I can't bear just continuing to look at the happy past without remembering their eventual fates... My eventual fate.

I'm going to die here, aren't I?

I sniffled a bit as I suddenly perked up overhearing someone's approach. I didn't expect anyone, going to wipe my tears and turn around to see who it was. I expected someone like Ruby or Taco but...

...You alright?"

I gazed at 8-Ball warily as he raised an eyebrow. He seemed a little awkward to have found me, rubbing the back of his head a bit. I glanced to the side, trying to avoid eye contact as he went to approach me a little. "Sorry if I.. Interrupted you." He spoke a little in his typical monotone voice. "You miss her, don't you." I glanced up at him, wiping my tears and nodding a bit. I had no idea what he knew. I never saw him around, really..

"I thought so.." He muttered under his breath. "Well, I *can't* really help much with getting her back or anything because erm, she's gone. For good." He went to move his hand over to my shoulder, gently rubbing it. I flinched a little, observing him as he went to squat down on his knees. "But I *can* comfort you." He spoke softly.

"...Hm?" I was a little surprised, going to go and sit down properly as he went to do the same.

He glanced to the side. "I know how it feels to lose the ones closest to you.." He muttered a little. He rubbed his eyes a bit, seemingly because they were getting wet before continuing to rub my shoulder

to console me. "It's better to cope and move on rather than reminisce or feel nostalgia about the past." He stated. "I know it's hard. Certainly, if it was suddenly."

"..W-Why are you comforting me?"

"Because you deserve someone to lean onto.. I know that you really don't right now.. We don't know eachother much either, but, it's better to have someone you don't quite know to cry into and help you than have nobody at all."

I hesitated, tearing up. "...Mmgn-" I went to lean into him. "B-But.. I-I don't know! It should've been me... I should've been the one to have been-"

"Pencil. I know you wish that it wasn't her... I thought that too.. After the whole *incident*." He frowned a little. "She was just at the wrong place at the wrong time, unfortunately. You can't change that now.."

"I-I wish I could've!"

"...I know." He growled a little but seemingly kept his cool despite that. "It'll sting. It'll probably sting for a while, days, months.. Even years. Even with this.. You need to move on, face forward." He replied. "It'll be hard since we're in this situation, but I know there has to be a way we can look towards a better future.. I mean, this is just observation but.. You, Ruby, and Taco seem to be nice friends now."

I hesitated as he said Taco's name. "..Right.." I bit my lip, not completely believing his words.

"Even if they aren't your friends," He seemed to have read my mind as he raised an eyebrow. "They seem to be people comforting you during these bad times. It'll be hard. But I know you can do it.. No matter what happens." He mumbled to me, going to move from just rubbing my shoulder to straight-up hugging me. I was surprised by the contact, but I felt tears stream down my cheeks and I couldn't hold it anymore.

"..I-I don't know-" I sniffled, trying to take in the thought of possibly

not surviving. Match was so close... Like.. Nobody else mattered to me. She was basically my salt to my pepper. "I-I don't think I can move on.." I was shaking a little, feeling vulnerable against him. Hell, he could kill me right now if he wanted. The thought made me panic.

But, he didn't. "I'm sure you can." He reassured me, still acting soft towards me as he still held me. "I'm not quite the type to be this kind, but I believe you do deserve it. Just try your best, okay?"

...

I wasn't sure how to react. I gazed at him weakly.

"...Okay."

I gripped onto 8-Ball, sobbing into him and letting out everything. Time seemed to go so slow at this time. It felt like minutes, then hours, then even.. days. I stayed close to him, not knowing if this may be the last time I ever spoke to him. "..Thank you.." I said chokingly through my tears, feeling terrible inside.

"It's alright, no need to thank me."

I didn't know what to say. I bit my lip, going to slowly let go of him after a few more of seemingly hours of crying into him for comfort. I was so glad I could just tell someone. Ruby didn't seem like the type to be able to relate to me and calm her down and I didn't know how to feel about Taco to even try to go to her for this sort of thing. I was so glad 8-Ball tried to help.. I'd definitely keep it in mind.

"..Mmn.." I rubbed the back of my head, going to stand. "..It's probably getting late," I spoke. "..Thanks, again," I said, before going to turn away and begin to walk away from him. I didn't hear 8-Ball say anything more as I felt a warming presence wash over me.

I went to quietly begin walking downstairs from the third floor, going to head back to the main floor.

I was a little anxious I had reached the first floor.
Glancing around a bit, I made my way for the dormitory hallways. It was probably late.. Around 9 PM at this point. I knew I had to get into bed before I broke the rules and got punished. I glanced to the

side and went to enter my room, going to close it once I stepped inside.

I frowned, stretching a bit tiredly as I went to take off my band and untie my ponytail. I yawned a bit, visibly tired. I just wanted to pass out.. My eyes felt puffy, huffing a little as I slowly stumbled onto my bed and slowly went to pass out.

[5] Fun & Games.

Waking up felt like a chore.

Well, sorta everything was now... I groaned a little as I went to rise out of bed, tiredly going to grab the comb on my bedside table and beginning to brush my hair with it. It was pretty messy from the night's sleep and I intended on going to breakfast today.

I didn't check the time until I had finished brushing to realize it was still fairly early in the morning. I knew it would be a little while until everyone would be there, spending the time wisely by heading into the bathroom of my room and washing myself up to get myself ready. I slipped on my jacket as I looked around a little before stepping out of my room and walking down the hallway of the dorms.

I watched as Loser was heading out of his dorm, yawning a little and messing with his sunglasses, and beginning to walk to the cafeteria. Hm, might as well. I went to approach him, intrigued. "Hey, Loser!" I called over to him. He jumped a little after I had called him, turning over to him. "Huh? O-Oh. Hey Pencil.." He waved a little, smiling. I grinned a little at him. "Heading to get breakfast?" He nodded. "May I join you?" I nudged him a little, watching as he looked to the side. "Oh? S-Sure! Come on, now." He went to go and lead me to the cafeteria, myself following close behind him. We both had approached the cafeteria after a short walk, as we all said our goodbyes and parted. I went to look around, relieved to see everyone alive and eating. I went to join Ruby as she was sharing a waffle with Dora.

Ruby turned over. "Oh, hey Pence!" She eagerly said, going to shove her half of the waffle in her mouth. Dora let out a small giggle as she was nibbling a little at her waffle, before looking up and waving at me. I waved back at the both of them, making my seat. "Sup, what are you both up to?"

Dora shrugged. "Oh, nothing... I was planning to go and play in the arcade with Ruby today." She informed me. I nodded. "Oh, sure! I was planning to investigate the place. I might go and join you guys later today?" Ruby gave finger guns, chewing down her waffle. "Sure!" She said through her muffled voice, probably spitting out chunks of waffle as she spoke. Dora gave a small smile, flinching a little over Ruby talking while she was eating. "Finish eating before you do that-!" She exclaimed a little

I nodded, going to get up. "I'm gonna go get a glass of water and then head out to check around the place. Kay?" I spoke, the other two nodded as I looked around a bit to see how everyone else was doing. Everyone seemed to be doing their own thing. I headed into the kitchen, going to grab a glass cup and going to pour the contents of a water bottle inside of it. I put away the bottle of water before turning around and nearly dropping my glass overseeing Gelatin.

That little shit scared the fucking daylights out of me...

"W-WH- Oh.. It's you.." I growled a little. "What the hell do you want?" I raised an eyebrow, frowning as I was trying to leave the kitchen. Gelatin smiled, shrugging. "Oh, can I not get a snack?? I'm just hungry~" He teased a little, brushing past me and going to look through the fridge. "Hmm.." I rolled my eyes, not saying anything as I took a sip of my glass and left as soon as I could.

I looked around, counting them in my head...

5..

Wait, 5?

That's not right.. There are currently 8 of us alive and I'm one of them.. Gelatin's in the kitchen so... I noticed Liy was missing from her seat, with half-eaten pancakes from the moved seat. I was a little worried, wanting to check up on her. I hadn't talked to her in forever and she's been really off lately. I rubbed the back of my head as I drank my drink and I went to leave the cafeteria and tried to think of the possible places she could be.

After a bit of trial and error with my thoughts, I had an idea that she

could possibly have been in the library investigating more of her talent. To my surprise, she actually was in there. Liy was sitting in a chair, her legs on the library table as she was invested in reading a book. I worried had finished my drink, walking over to the table she had been sitting at and putting down my empty cup. "..Liy." I frowned as she didn't respond.

"Liy," I said, a bit louder and firmer. I had a feeling she was ignoring me now.. I hesitantly went to approach her, going to grab the book she was reading out of her hand and glaring at her. "LIY!" She nearly fell back, surprised over the book being snatched out of her hands as she looked over at me.

"What."

"Why are you ignoring me?? I just wanted to check up on you." I felt a little hurt, holding my arms.

"..I'm busy." She rubbed her eyes a bit, going to stand from her seat and put her hands on her hips. "I have my own things to do. I don't want to talk, Pencil."

"...B-But.. You're worrying me, Liy. Are you sure you're fine?"

"Yes.. Pencil, why are you worrying so fucking much?"

"B-Because.. I ca-"

"If you cared, you'd leave me the hell alone!" She snapped at me angrily, before going to snatch back her book and walk back to read.

"..." I looked away a little. "P-Please at least do something with the rest of the school sometime.. You can't just stay away from everyone else forever." I murmured before walking away. I didn't want to look at her anymore.. I felt things had changed.

She had changed.

The idea hurt me inside.. I didn't want to lose her. I didn't want to let go. I felt so goddamn weak and useless against everything that was happening to the point it was driving me insane. The talk was quick but painful. It felt like hundreds of needles were piercing my heart

and I felt like I wanted to just snap and..

God, I hate to admit it...

..*Kill someone.*

That was the point. Wasn't it. I was being driven insane from the lack of care anyone had at this point and I felt selfish and alone. I gripped my hands into fists as I remembered the plans Dora and Ruby had about being in the arcade.. I was hoping it'd calm me down from everything. I didn't want to be reminded anymore. I wiped the tears that were slowly trickling down my cheeks, tiredly going to the room that I knew was located on the same floor. Once I entered, I had noticed Ruby and Dora both there as they had said.

"Hey."

The two of them turned over to me, Ruby waving excitedly as Dora glanced over. The two were at a claw machine, filled with plushies. "Hi! I'm so happy you came!" She went to hug me playfully, making me nod. "Yep. So... You guys just wanna play some games in here or?" I looked over as Dora made a small wince over the plush barely missing the chute as it was dropped.

Dora nodded, sighing a little. Ruby went to let go of me as she noticed Dora finish playing. "Sure, why not?! We have the arcade to ourselves!" She confidently said. She went to run off to play one of the other machines in the place, Dora about to follow before stopping and looking at me. "Do you want to stop her when erm, it's time to eat?" She awkwardly asked, fidgeting with her hands. I nodded, putting my hands in my pockets. "Of course," I replied, watching as the two ran off.

We went to play lots of games and machines in the arcade together. There was a large variety such as pinball games, classic arcade games, and the more newer and advanced games. I never really went to the arcade to check it out, so the sight of all of this was truly

amazing.

Ruby was trying to play one of the pinball machines, grunting and having her tongue out in determination to win. "Come on.." She muttered, continuing to play against the ball. Dora and I were on both sides of her, cheering her on as she was playing. "Come on! You can do it!" Dora cheered. "Yeah!" I added on, grinning a little at how fun the experience was.

Ruby made a loud groan as she watched the last ball miss her attempts, looking at us. "Darn it.." She crossed her arms a bit, sighing. I laughed a little. "It's alright, Roobs. There's always next time." I reassured her, laughing a little with Dora. That was pretty fun, though. Ruby frowned a little before breaking into playful laughter as well. We were pretty thrilled, before hearing a growl. "Huh?" Dora looked over at us both. Ruby bit her lip, giggling a little. "Oops! That was me.. My stomach says I'm pretty hungry." She told us.

I nodded. "Sure. Let's head to the cafeteria.. I bet we can think of something super fun to do with everyone like we did here!" I smirked a little at the thought. Ruby clapped at the idea, smiling. "Ooh, yeah!! We hadn't ever done that.."

"Sounds good, come on before we're too late to eat." She went to take both of our hands as we left for the cafeteria.

[5] Exciting Plannings!

I smiled a little as Ruby, Dora, and myself had walked into the cafeteria to see everyone there. We went to go into the kitchen, going to grab whatever was there to eat before heading to our table and sitting down. "Soo..." Dora started, observing as Ruby began to munch down on the sandwich from her tray. I went to go and drink my carton of apple juice. "Do you guys just wanna head back to the arcade after this?" I asked, the both of them nodding.

"Of course!"

"Yeah!!"

I smiled a little, before hearing someone speak up. "Hey everyone!" I looked over, noticing Taco standing on the tables. I raised my eyebrow, skeptical. What was she doing... Taco smirked. "So, y'know that idea we had with the whole play thing??"

"Uh, yeah. What about it." 8-Ball leaned back on his chair a bit, a little skeptical as he watched her smirk and cross her arms. "Well, what if we did the cool thing of doing it soon??" She proposed.

"Uh, like when.." Liy seemed a little judgmental, huffing a little and looking to the side. "Oh! Oh!! What about tomorrow??" Ruby smiled, raising her hand excitedly. She seemed interested in the idea, I don't blame her. Taco pointed over to her. "Yeah! How does that sound?" Loser moved his hand to his chin a little, hesitant. "Mm.. Well..." He looked over to 8-Ball, as he shrugged a little. "W-We'll both be free tomorrow.." He smiled timidly.

I nodded. "Same for me," I spoke up, rubbing the back of my head. The other two and I would have plenty of time to play more arcade games tonight before going to do activities with the rest of the class. Liy rolled her eyes, giving a small glance to me before going to look away as we made eye contact. I didn't reply, a little hurt.

"...Whatever, I can go." She muttered as Gelatin giggled. "Of course I'm free!" He smiled in a sadistic way.

Dora nodded, giving a thumbs up to signal to everyone else that she was probably going. Ruby nodded. "Obviously I'd want to do it!!" She smiled happily, putting her hands on her hips and going to stand on her chair. I was a little worried, squinting at her and mouthing her to get down before she fell and got hurt. Ruby frowned a little, going to sit down as Taco chuckled a little.

"So that's all of us! Great! Meet you guys back here tomorrow to plan things out?"

Everyone was talking among themselves about the idea, all of them seemingly being into the idea of it. Ruby seemed really ecstatic for something like this and I honestly get why. She squealed a bit. "I'm so excited!!" Dora went to try to calm her down, "I-It's not that surprising.." She watched as Ruby took a big bite in her sandwich, eagerly chewing it. "It is!! I wanted to do something with everyone else the day we got here!" She replied. I shrugged. "Eh, well... We better go play some more games and get a good night's rest for tomorrow, kay?" I spoke, as the other two nodded.

We all finished our lunch before going to stand and head out of the door for back to the arcade, full of energy because of the food we had. I mostly intended to just watch the other two have their fun, heading up to the third floor and going to enter the arcade to play games. I grinned a little as I put my hands in my pockets and looked around.

The two were talking to each other about what they could do. "Hey, you know that super cool fighting game?? Wanna go up against me? Maybe the winner could go against Pencil!" Ruby exclaimed, happily nudging Dora.

She giggled a little, nodding. "Of course. Pencil, you good with watching?"

She looked back at me, as I nodded and gave a small thumbs up. I watched as the two ran off to one of the machines. Knowing I might be waiting for a while, I went to go to pull out my phone and go and

browse it a bit. I mostly wanted to look through my gallery pictures but I considered trying to contact at least somebody out of this goddamn hell. It felt weird that I still actually had access to my phone, though, plus there is a charger in my dorm... Though I noticed from the UI at the top, there seemed to be no signal or access to the internet. Which unfortunately was the only way I could contact the outside world...

I frowned a little as I tried to go to my text messages and try to text Book, Bubble, or Icy in our group chat... It wasn't amusing to watch as it said my messages had failed to send. I felt upset, glancing up over at Ruby as she was still playing with Dora and having her fun. I hesitantly went to go to the info of the group chat, looking at the members of the group and sighing at the sight of Match's name... I wish I had her phone.. Wait..

I don't want to look right now.

I groaned a little as I made a mental note to check her room for any sign of her phone later. I went to go out of the messages app and go right for the gallery. I know that most of my apps, which are primarily social media, require the internet to really access so I had no other choice. I was a little curious to know if I downloaded any old videos I used to post. Maybe vlogs or something. I wouldn't exactly be surprised since that's the talent that got me into this goddamn poor excuse of a hell. I looked to the side a little, noticing that I did download a few things that were posted directly to social media. I wanted to avoid my camera roll since most of those had photographs of me and.. Match..

I felt a wave of guilt wash over me, groaning a little as I went to go and click on one of the videos at random to check out what it was. To my surprise, it seemed perfectly edited and everything. "Hey, viewers!" My past self began, grinning at the camera. I could tell it was from the same phone because of how I was holding it and the perspective I was in. I seemed so much younger and immature... Again, this was before I had to go through multiple deaths. One of which was my childhood best friend. "Today I'm going to talk about my daily schedule and what I usually do on a school day." I continued, going to move the camera a bit to get a better angle of myself.

I kept on watching a little, surprised. Oh.. It was this one. "So.." I moved my hand to cover up the camera before moving it away and revealing myself in bed with pajamas. "First, I wake up before going to get ready for the school day." The video cut to an outside perspective, showing me raise from lying on the bed. I was clearly acting some of it out, yawning a bit and rubbing my eyes before going to slowly move out of bed and stand. I jump and the video had cut to myself in the bathroom, facing a wall with a tower hanger in the background. I figured I was in my house.. Where I usually would be sleeping and doing my typical thing in.. Well, not really anymore obviously.

"Secondly! I'd wash my face, brush my teeth, and brush my hair with this!" I moved my hand off of the recorded screen and moved my hand back to reveal my lucky comb.. I used to use that every day. The camera cut to myself brushing my teeth quickly before going to turn on the sink and wash my face before looking back to the camera and giving a thumbs up. It felt awkward to watch this video.. I knew it was a few years old, so I wasn't surprised the quality wasn't the best. The camera shifted to me sitting in the kitchen, with a bowl in front of me. There was a box of cereal and a gallon of milk by the bowl, with a spoon inside of the bowl. "Before finally heading out of school, I'd change and eat breakfast!" I exclaimed. I put my hand up and snapped my fingers, transitioning to my school uniform and going to pour the milk and cereal into the bowl before moving those out of the scene. I raised the spoon, full of the cereal, and went to take a mouthful before going to move the spoon down and snap my fingers.

I then grabbed the bowl, showing the camera that I had finished before going to stand and jump to make it disappear. I knew all of this was edited to make sure the transitions were smooth and to be frank, it wasn't my worst work ever. I smiled a little as my past self waved at the camera. "Alright, time to head for school! See you guys later!" I gave a small wink before walking out of scene.

The video had ended there.

I felt tears come to my eyes, quickly looking away and wiping my face to remove the tears. "Hey, you okay?" I heard, looking over to see Ruby. I nodded. "Huh- Oh, yeah," I replied, trying to not cry or

show any sign of negative emotion. "You finished?" I asked, raising an eyebrow at the two as Dora nodded. "Mhm!" She put her hands behind her back, "Ruby kinda beat me so... Your turn!" She insisted.

I grinned. "Oh, yeah?" I put away my phone, looking over at her. "I'm sorta known to be a great player, as you should know.." I liked playing video games sometimes in my free time. The other girls and I usually headed for the nearby arcade by the boardwalk to play the games and they know I am usually the best at those sorta two-player fighter games. Ruby smirked. "Bet. Maybe this time I'll beat ya!" She playfully said as I got into position. I went to choose my character out of the selection of options before the game had begun and it was time to fight.

I had a pretty good start, being able to use the buttons to combo and attack her. I knew Ruby was infamous for button-mashing and usually using the same attack if it was successful. Once you get a little more experienced, it's not that had to combat against it. I blocked most of her attempts at a combo and I kept attacking. She did land some hits at me and used her main strength of any moment I was weak to try to get as many hits in. It was sorta intense, as I felt a bit of pressure on me as I was trying to make sure I would win against her for like.. the 30th time. I heard Ruby groaning a little as I had managed to drain all of her character's health and knock them out. "Woo!" I cheered a little for myself, as I heard Dora clap happily. "Well done, Pencil!" She smiled, before looking over to Ruby who was tearing and sniffling a bit. I felt a little bad for her but I knew she knew how good I was at this sorta thing.

"It's alright, Ruby. There's always next time." I reassured her.

"Y-You sure?"

"Yeah. I bet you can beat me if you try your hardest."

"..Mmn.." Ruby ran to hug me, laughing a little as she hugged and squeezed me a bit. I squeaked. "Roobee!" I chuckled a little as I went to nudge her off. "Whaatt??"

I rolled my eyes playfully over her clingy behavior. We were having fun together, but I knew that we couldn't be in here forever. Dora

messed with her bag a bit. "So.." She began. "We should really be getting back so we don't get punished for not being in our rooms." She smiled at the both of us. I gave a small thumbs-up, nodding. "Gotcha." I went to push Ruby off of me before going to hold her hand. Ruby gave a big smile before she began to lead both me and Dora out of the arcade and downstairs for our dorms.

The walk was silent. We didn't talk about much... I was lost in thought, thinking about a lot.

It was hard to move on.

So many things happened at once.. It felt like just yesterday where everyone was alive and I was in school with all of my friends. I don't even know what's going on out there.. All I know is that I am stuck here.

With friends.

I knew they all cared... I know they do. I love them so much, we had been through so much together, especially Ruby.. I didn't want her to meet the same fate as Match. I refuse.

I don't want to be the most clingy but losing her would basically kill me. I just.. I couldn't imagine losing both of them because of this stupid place. I wouldn't be able to live with the guilt that it was my fault. I would never.. I frowned a little at the thought. I went to distract myself by focusing on walking down the stairs with the other two. Playfully, I went to squeeze Ruby's hand to see how she'd react. To my enjoyment, she glanced over to me, giggling and giving a big smile back. I felt my hand being squeezed a little, knowing it was from her. The moment felt nice as we had reached the ground floor and headed for the hallways. The place was a little dark, probably because it was late in the evening and there was hardly ever any light.

I remembered the way, navigating through the dark as I went to take out my phone using my freehand and using it as a flashlight. "Hm.." I went to walk over to Dora's dorm and open it for her. "Here." I wanted to take both of them to their dorms before heading to my own. "Bye, you both!" Dora waved, giving a small smile before

entering her dorm and closing it. I gave a glance to Ruby before taking her to her own dorm. I put away my phone and smiled at her.

"Cya Roob."

"...Bye Pencil.." She was turning away, heading for her dorm, and was about to open the door before turning around and quickly hugging me before going to quickly enter her dorm and close the door. I jumped a little, snickering a bit before turning away. I knew I had to get to bed.. I didn't know what time it was, frowning a little to myself as I went to enter my dorm and close the door after.

I was pretty tired after all of the playing, so I was able to stumble into my bed after slipping off my headband and jacket to calmly fall asleep.

--

Another morning, another day.

I went to rise out of bed, yawning and stretching a bit as I knew today was a big day for all of us. I smiled to myself as I slipped my jacket on and went to untie my hair for easier brushing. I quickly brushed my hair before retying it and putting my headband back on. With confidence, I grinned to myself and headed out for breakfast once again. It was mostly because I was hungry, but it was also a way for everyone to check that everyone else was alive.

I didn't want them to think I was dead...

I didn't want to even think about anybody else dying either. I frowned over the thought, glancing to the side as I had entered the cafeteria to thankfully see everyone there. Taco had some papers out and was in the middle of the table discussing with Loser, Gelatin, and 8-Ball about the play assumingly. Dora and Ruby were sitting at the side, eating but spectating the four of them discussing. Liy was to the side, frowning as she seemed to just be wanting to eat her food. I playfully went to go and grab a soda from the kitchen before going to join everyone else. "Hey, you guys talking about the play?" I asked.

Taco turned over, nodding. "Yep! We're trying to figure out what

sorta play we should do.. I kinda wanna do cool action!" She eagerly said, 8-Ball frowning. "As I've said.. A musical might be better." Gelatin snickered. "No! Comedy's *totally* the way to go. The amount of time to write the songs? Nuh-uh, not for us." I raised an eyebrow, clearly seeing the small conflict in deciding such a feat. I smiled a little. "Say.. Loser, what do you think? Since you're the Ultimate Author, you surely must have something good."

Loser looked over, "Hm?-" He seemed to have been thinking. "O-Oh! No.. My idea isn't that good."

"Loser, I'm sure it's not that bad."

"Yeah! It has to be totally good."

"Hehe, I bet it's involved with murder~"

Everyone gave a small glance to Gelatin, frowning.

"What? Can I *not* joke about dark humor? I'm the Ultimate Comedian here!" Gelatin put his arms up, raising an eyebrow but keeping his big goofy grin. I looked back over to Loser. "Whatever. I bet it's a perfectly good idea.." I smiled at him.

He hesitated. "W-Well uh.." He looked away, playing with his hands. "I-I was thinking romanceee..." He murmured a little, seemingly embarrassed. I looked over at everyone else for their reactions. Taco seemed to be the first to process his suggestion. "Oh! Like Sword and Tulip? Ooh, I love classics. We should do that!" She pointed to the paper, writing the word romance on it with a nearby pencil and circling it. 8-Ball nodded, giving a small closed smile. "I like the idea.." He spoke.

Gelatin frowned. "Ughhh... Only because you guys want to." He didn't seem that eager, crossing his arms and frowning. I was relieved he didn't try to argue..

"Great! Come on, we should get headed for the drama club room.. The faster we get there, the more time we have to prepare!" She grinned, going to collect the papers and begin to head there. I raised an eyebrow, looking at everyone else. Loser looked over to me for a

moment before looking away and standing to follow. 8-Ball came after him. I looked to the side as I took the time to stand up and went to go and get Ruby and Dora who was waiting for me.

"Come on!" Ruby giggled, going to pull both of us into a small group hug before skipping happily after. Everyone else came after us once we followed Taco out for the floor. It felt great.. Everyone was murmuring to themselves or striking up a conversation with each other. It felt so nice.. I noticed Taco trying to talk to Liy, probably not being that successful in her attempts. I wasn't exactly surprised..

I went to take the time to try to think about the past.. How much I missed it..

Well.. It's never gonna come back.

I lost so much..

How much more will I lose?

...I will never know until the time comes.. I teared up a little, going to bury into my hoodie and try to blur everything around me. My head hurt. Everything hurt. My heart felt like it was skipping beats. I wanted to explode inside. I wanted to just.. not exist for a single day. I can't do this. I wasn't sure if we'd ever get there..

Will my friends be okay?

Will I be okay?

Will anyone be okay?

I wasn't sure..

That was until I heard that familiar confident voice.

"We're here!"

[5] Lights, Cameras, Action!

I looked over to Taco, noticing the drama club door right in front of where she was standing. She was looking at the rest of us, playfully going to open it up. "Come right in!" She urged. We all walked into it, looking around. Some of us, like myself, had been here before but for certain people, it was their first time.

Loser looked with amazement. "W-Wow... This feels like the perfect room for writing besides the library.." He commented, going to walk around a little to get a feel for the place. 8-Ball went to follow after. I watched as everyone went to go explore, talk to others, or do their own thing. I went to walk over to Taco. "Hm, you sure know how to lead.." I went to playfully ruffle her hair as she chuckled. "Huh? Oh, that was nothing... I know how great of a leader you are."

"Huh?"

"You know... With your whole... Friend group?"

I hesitated a little, raising an eyebrow. "What do you mean..."

"Oh, you know." Taco gave a small smile, going to bring me over to a set of chairs that were making up the seats for audience members to sit while watching plays. She went to bring me to sit down, making eye contact with me. "This might sound creepy and all but.. I've seriously always looked up to you. I remember being in school every day before this and going 'yeah... I wish I was with them.' when looking at you guys." She chuckled a bit, looking to the side. I stared in disbelief.

"..R-Really?" I spoke warily.

"Well, yeah!- ...I know FreedSmart Prep is basically the past now and all, but I still worry you hate me for uh.." She groaned a little, messing with her glasses and avoiding eye contact. "All of the

gossiping and stuff... I just wanted to seem cool to you guys and... I shouldn't have said the things I said." She huffed a little. I stared at her for a bit.

I didn't know what to say...

Was this an apology?

For everything..?

...

"...It's fine."

I felt Taco's arm wrap around me as she was hiding into me. I jumped a little, gazing down at her. "..I-I wish I could've apologized sooner.." She mumbled to me. I frowned. I knew she wouldn't have any chance to do it, though. All of the other girls hated her, mostly Book. The memories of Book constantly talking bad about Taco in front of all of the girls made us have a very negative opinion of the poor girl. I was blinded by the care of the girls to not even consider Taco's perspective...

Well, I guess that's something that came out of this fucking living nightmare.

"Taco, it's fine. You couldn't have done anything anyways..." I muttered. I watched as she looked up at me, on the verge of tears.

"I-I-"

"You can't change the past." I frowned, hesitant to say my next few

words. "...I should realize that myself."

Taco looked to the side, going to let go of me. "There's a lot of things I wish I could change... I guess that's never happening, huh?" She sounded a lot more down, upset mostly. I felt sympathy, softening up a little as I went to grab her shoulder. "Don't worry, Taco," I spoke. "Sometimes moving on from the bad things could create a brighter future."

"..Not for just you..."

"..But all of us."

Taco hesitated as I spoke, going to let go of me. "..R-Right. Well.." She looked away, avoiding eye contact. "There's a play that needs to be set up, come on." She didn't sound as confident as she did before... Awkward, even. I felt like I said the wrong words but I couldn't exactly do anything about it now. Taco went to stand, clapping her hands. "Okay, everyone!" She spoke loudly. "Let's group up and begin discussing." I went to stand from my seat, moving my hands to my pockets and watching as everyone else began to walk back over to where Taco was. "We need to begin by assigning roles then we can work from there."

She glanced over at me. "Pencil, I know you're a great leader!" She grinned, probably referring to the conversation we just had. "Could you be our director?"

"W-Wait- What?"

"You know... You could probably manage everyone really well!"

"...But, aren't you like.. the director already?"

"Pssh, me? No... I'm just helping setting up! Come on, I bet you'd be

amazing. Right everyone?" Taco walked over and playfully leaned on me, as I heard everyone else make supportive comments.

"Yeah! Go girl! I bet Pence-Pence would totally be an amazing leader!"

"..Mm, yeah. I'll agree with Ruby here."

"I-I'm sure that doesn't sound like a bad idea.."

"Sure."

I laughed a little. "Alright, alright... If you guys *really* say so." I smiled a little at all of them, knowing that I had the support I remember having back then. I rubbed the back of my head. "So, I'll assume I assign the rest of the roles. Right?"

"Mhm!"

I squinted, nodding. "Right... Well, Loser. I know you're the Ultimate Author and the one who suggested the whole play idea so, I think you'd be great as a scriptwriter. Same for Liy, who I know can contribute nice ideas." I pointed at those two, as they exchanged glances and nodded.

"S-Sure... I'm sure we can make a nice script." Loser smiled at her a little.

"..Uh, right."

I went to look over to Gelatin and Dora, hesitating. "Well, I think you both might be skilled enough to control the lights and stuff. Sounds good?"

Gelatin gave a thumbs up, smirking. "Yep! Sounds great~!" He went to grab Dora's hand and go and drag her off somewhere. She yelped, before looking back and giving me a small nod.

"The rest of you can make props." I looked at Taco, 8-Ball, and Ruby as they were listening for my commands. It felt odd to be in the power of others from my friends... Though, it definitely felt nice. Taco nodded. "Sure can do!" She looked over to the other two. "You

guys can get started. I'll join you soon!" She said. Ruby smiled. "Okie dokie!" She went to look over to 8-Ball, before going to walk off and talk about assumingly the props. I looked over at Taco, raising an eyebrow. "What's up."

"..Mmmm... Thanks for that talk earlier. I really needed it." She held her arms, nuzzling into her turtleneck sweater. "..Well, cya!" She smiled as she went to run off with the others. I nodded, giving a thumbs up. I knew I had a bit of time since everyone was probably just setting up the basics with just the knowledge of it being a romantic play. I went to go take out my phone once again, deciding that maybe that talk also helped me...

Well...

It was hard to cope.

I went to scroll on my phone, knowing I won't be able to do anything besides look through my gallery. I decided to go to the camera app, shrugging a little to myself as I went to lean back on my seat a bit. It was on selfie mode, as I put two of my fingers up and grinned as I took a quick picture just to remember this horrible event forever. I went to go look through the gallery, considering watching a few of my old vlogs or videos with the other girls... I wondered if I could look at the text messages I sent before I got forced into her without any way of contacting them. I sighed a little.

"So! Where to first?" I spoke from the screen, sounding much younger. This was a few years ago... Before I met the others... It was just us three. Bubble, Match, and myself... We were so young. "I totally think that this would be like cool to be at!" I was recording us at the playground, as the phone was propped up and it was just showing us being excited. I squinted at the clothing we were wearing, trying to remember that fateful day.

From the sky, it seemed like the middle of the day and it was sunny with hardly any clouds in the sky. It was a nice day for all of us to be out, enjoying the summer skies in June. "Can't catch us!" I spoke to Bubble, laughing as we were all playing tag. The memories felt heartwarming, as I smiled at the screen. I went to stop the video and look up, going to see how everyone was else was doing.

I looked over to where Loser and Liy were, as they were debating over what the play would be like. Hesitant, I began to walk over to where they were to check on what they were doing. "Hey," I spoke, putting my hands behind my back and smiling at them with a small smile.

"H-Huh? Oh, hi Pencil.." Loser timidly said, fidgeting as he glanced away a little. "Liy and I were choosing who'd be the couple and stuff... Nothing too big... Could you ask the prop makers to try to make a high school set?" He asked.

I gave a small thumbs up, looking over to Liy to see what she wanted to say. She looked over to me, frowning before looking away.
I assumed that meant she didn't want to talk.

I walked over to where Ruby, 8-Ball, and Taco were making the decorations to give the play a better feel. I waved back to Ruby as she had noticed me and began calling me over.

"Hey, Pence! What do you think of these??" She showed off a costume she tried to make.

"I'm sorta the best fashion person around so..."

She drifted off as she had realized the mistake she made, looking up to me. I hesitated as she spoke that, knowing she didn't intend it but...

I held my arms, groaning. "M-Maybe I should go.."

"W-Wait! I'm sorry-"

The other two looked up in surprise as they had noticed us both conversating. I glanced over to them, noticing the concern in both of their expressions as I went to go and sit down on my knees. "I'll be alright," I reassured her. "Anyhow, I love these props... But I got word from our writers about the setting of our play."

"What may that be?" 8-Ball raised an eyebrow at my words, putting down the scissors and pieces of cardboard he was holding.

"A High School."

"What?? But we're already in a high school! Couldn't they try something better??" Ruby huffed, crossing her arms.

Taco shrugged a little over the idea as she looked over to 8-Ball. He was getting up and dusting himself off. "I'll speak to the writers. I'm interested to see what they say.. It'll be very helpful for props." He said as he put his hands in his pockets and left to where Loser and Liy were sitting.

I nodded at him before looking at the other two.

"Keep up the good work. I'm going to go and see what the rest of us are doing."

I went to walk off.

I began hearing arguing from the corner of the room, raising an eyebrow as I knew this would be something... I headed in that direction out of curiosity, noticing Dora & Gelatin attempting to work at the lights.

"Woah- You might accidentally drop that! Give me it-"

"Nuh-uh, I am doing this right! I bet'cha."

"No, you're going to kill someone..!"

"And what? I can just frame you~"

"Gelatin!"

I frowned a little over Gelatin's playful teasing. "Both of you, stop arguing." I approached them, skeptical. "Everyone else is making the play run smoothly. Have you guys been trying to figure out how to work the lights?" I asked as Dora snatched the rope that was tied to the lights above the stage away from Gelatin. She went to tie it back so that it was propped back up before looking back at me.

"Mhm. I'm at least trying to.." She looked over to the smaller male as he stuck his tongue out playfully.

"Don't blame me! I'm just bored waiting for you guyssss.."

"Uh-huh... We're nearly done anyways, we just need the props made so once you guys figure out how to do that then could you help them?" I asked.

"Oh, of course!"

"Yeaaa... I guess if it speeds things up!"

I nodded as I went to walk off... I knew things would probably have to go fast if we can even get the time. Luckily, not many important things happened so I could skip all of that... Whatever it was. I knew something was quite suspicious when I had passed by the writer's table and noticed 8-Ball and Loser chuckling to each other and looking at the script. I hadn't seen it yet and most of it would have to be improv in order to do this well but...

Liy didn't seem involved.

At all.

I felt a little bad but didn't say anything as I called everyone to where backstage would be to have a small meeting. "Okay, is everyone ready? I want to start this as soon as we can! The actors won't have much time to prepare if we want to do this today, so a bit of improv won't hurt, right?" I looked at Loser, as he gave a small nod.

"As long as you get the gist of the story.."

"Right! So let's get practicing, then." I went to put my hand out and walk over to Loser, getting handed the script as I went to begin reading what it had to say. "Hm.." I grinned, smiling at Loser. "This is great! No wonder you're the Ultimate Author.." I complimented before going to walk over to everyone and give them their scripts... We spent the rest of the time we had to practice and finish up the props before it was time to begin.

I took a deep breath, looking over at the others who weren't controlling the lights. "Let's do this.." I murmured.

It was showtime...

I watched as the curtains unraveled and Taco was standing right in the center of it. There were little to no audience members due to everyone involved having to be actors. "Well... It's time for my first day of school." She had her hair up in a bun. Her outfit, or costume, was your typical schoolgirl outfit. She was wearing a tucked white shirt with a bow, layering that with a cardigan on top of it. Her skirt was a plaid short skirt as her socks were white and long, up to the knees. That was the outfit we were able to throw together for everyone while we had the time, with the boys having long pants instead of a skirt. "My name is Taco and I don't exactly have much clue on what's going on.." I didn't have the best view but I knew this would be fun. "I've heard very good things about this place, and, to be frank... I'd want to make the best first impression."

It was soon my cue, as I looked over to Liy and gave a small nod. Liy was clearly off, lost in thought... Luckily, I knew Loser would be aware and from reading the script I was certain she wasn't given that many lines.

"Ugh, so like... That one boy is so fucking stupid!" I began to speak, trying to remember the lines the best I could as the both of us had walked out on stage, giving a small smile to Dora who was in the front to see the play from an audience's point of view. "Hey- Are you even listening to me?!" I snapped at Liy, trying to play it off as just acting.

Liy perked up, looking over and glaring at me. "Tch, sorry." She went to look over to Taco. "Oh, who do we have here?" She smirked, playing in character. "Oh, it's the new girl.." She had the same school uniform, but she had it so that her jacket was only down to below her shoulders as if it was a fashion choice. "What's a loser like you doing here?" She sneered.

"Yeah, we rule this school and we don't need anybody like you around here!"

"J-Jeez... Sorry!-" She looked away as she messed with her glasses a bit. "I-I'll get out of your way." Liy went to walk up to her and shove her gently so she didn't get hurt, walking past as I followed her. Taco flinched, going to stumble back as she looked over.

Liy turned around, moving her hand through her hair. "Get in the way of us both again and you get it." She threatened before we had walked off stage. Taco sighed, holding her arms before walking off. The lights had suddenly turned off as I went to run back on stage to help the others switch the props out. I was pretty happy with how well it was going so far... It was soon showing Taco walking back home, Loser soon walking on stage.

"Hey, how's it going?" He said in his soft-spoken voice, having his hands behind his back as he was moving around in a timid pose. "Oh, nothing.. School was rough. It's a shame we had to go to different ones."

"Don't worry about it too much, I'm sure school won't be that bad later on." He reassured her. He went to move to her side, patting her back gently. "I am certain you'll meet new friends there."

"Are you sure?"

"Of course." He went to hug her before going to walk off stage. I went to look over to him as he took a breath of relief, probably nervous to be on stage like that... Even if it was really just the people he's been stuck with for a while now.

I walked over to him, wanting to check on him a bit. "You alright?" I knew he wrote the script so I wasn't too certain why he was worried.

"Y-Yeah... Stage fright, that's all.."

"Ah, okay."

I listened as the play continued to move on, going to peek to see what was going on. Taco had met a new friend, Ruby. Taco was introducing her new friend to Loser. It was then time for me to come on stage. I remembered my lines clearly, as I took a deep breath and stepped on stage. "Oh, look who it is." I moved my hands on my hips, raising an eyebrow. I knew I was pretending but I felt a little bad. "What do you want, Pencil??" Taco frowned at me. "Oh, a dumb nerd like you should know... Ruby." I smirked.

"Ugh.." Taco rubbed the back of her head. "Ruby, go. I'll deal with

her." Ruby nodded. "S-Stay safe.." She pretended to nervously look at me, giving me a small playful smile and wink before running off stage. I couldn't help but let out a chuckle, both from her expression before she left and since it felt in character. "Aw, does the little shrimp think she can fight against me??" I mocked.

Taco stared at me, huffing as she went to run and pin me against one of the nearby fake lockers. I flinched in surprise, not expecting to be slammed like that.. "Gh-" I winced, a little in pain with how hard she did it. Taco looked up, noticing my pained face. "You okay?" She mouthed, as I gave a small nod. She went to smile a little before speaking.

"Back off of me and my friend!" She shouted.

"Hey!-" I went to move my arms and push her gently, watching as she went to fall back to pretend she got pushed. Taco went to catch her own fall, frowning at me. "I'm not backing off of anyone! You can't tell me and my bestie what to do." I hissed... The word bestie stung a little but I knew it was all fake.

Fake...

Taco went to put her hands on her hips. "As if. I know what your true colors are! I'll make sure everyone knows of it, got it?" She remarked.

I smirked, winking at her.

"Oh, have fun.."

Taco nearly let out a chuckle, covering her mouth quickly to stop it. I smiled a little as she rolled her eyes at me playfully. "Oh, I will!" She went to walk off the stage as I went the other way off. I took a deep breath, stretching a bit from the earlier thing. "Ughh.." I rubbed the back of my head as I looked over to Taco from behind the stage.

"Oh no, you okay??" Taco went to walk over to me, putting her hand on my shoulder. I nodded, giving a smile to her as I put my hands behind my back.
"I'm alright, Taco." I felt her rub my shoulder as she gave a sympathetic look. "Mm... If you say so. You're sure? Like 100%?"

"Of course I am."

"Well alright then... Just don't forget that you have one more scene for now." She reminded.

"Good luck."

I gave a small nod as I went to part and walk to where I was intended to come out of and prepare. I felt a wave of fear wash over me as I stepped back on stage, where the lights turned on to show Liy seemingly impatiently waiting there. I took a deep breath, looking down at my feet as I slowly began to walk towards her. "Liy." I began, putting my hands behind my back. She turned around, looking over to me as she was holding something in her hand.

"Did you see who that girl is friends with?"

I nodded.

"Yes. I did.."

"Sweet, hand over the goods. I mean... If we're going to stay top of the food chain, we need to prove that we belong there, hm?" She smiled in a sinister tone. I didn't think much of it, nervous as I saw her expression. I knew it was fake.

But wow.

She was good at acting.

I went to go and walk up to her, leaning in her ear and pretending to whisper Ruby's name. Well, instead...
"Can we please talk later... I'm worried for you."
Liy gave a small glance at me as I parted and smiled at her softly. She rolled her eyes. "Thanks, bestie." She didn't look at me as she clearly tried to avoid my question. "You're dismissed... Keep an eye on that girl, got it?"

"Yep. I know.." I went to turn away and leave the stage. I knew the plot was definitely progressing now that the main plot point had begun... I was a little interested to see how this would turn out.

I'm sure we all did good.

I noticed 8-Ball and Taco chatting by a wall, hanging together. 8-Ball looked at me, waving a little as I came over. "Hey, you both. Ever been acting in a play before?" I asked, a little curious about their thoughts. "Hm? Oh, no. I never was interested in this type of thing." 8-Ball firmly said, looking to the side. "I'm more of a by the book person. Creative things aren't my type." Taco nodded. "Seems like it! I've only been in one play before this and it was a total flop... So doing this feels great for me!"

I smiled. "Cool to know... Well, it's time for your time to shine." I looked at them both. "Good luck." The two nodded as I stepped to the side and let them before head for onstage. I didn't quite remember everything about the next few scenes as things seemed to pass by so fast.

It was time for the turning point now. The climax... I went to prepare myself, dusting my coat and taking a deep breath. I knew I had to do my best... After in the play, hearing and witnessing Liy do such nasty stuff to everyone. I got sick of it and snap at her at last.

I felt shaky doing this, though. I stepped on stage and saw Liy waiting. She was gazing at me, expressionless. Hesitant, I urged myself to inch closer.

Slowly.

I stood there, twisting my face into a determined look. "What is it," I said in a firm tone, turning my hands into fists. Liy let out a chuckle. "Oh, you know." She moved her hands behind her back, keeping a straight posture. "Where's the information I asked for, bestie." She spoke the last word coldly, making it sound forced and fake. I sighed, glaring at her.

"I'm not giving you shit."

"What was that?"

"I don't want to be your friend anymore, Liy," I growled. "I'm tired of how you treat everyone like goddamn shit!" I snapped.

"..."

Liy frowned, stepping closer to me. "You have nowhere else to go, bitch." She sneered. "I gave you a chance to live but you blew it. I would love seeing you struggle out there..." She tilted her head before turning away.

"Leave."

That was genuine. I felt sick to my stomach as she said that, nodding and going to run off stage. I felt miserable, sighing. I knew that at least things would get better for my character from now on. I observed everyone else backstage, knowing Dora was watching like an audience member. I knew the show must go on and I was determined to finish this...

Once Taco had found out what had happened between Liy and me, she chose to take me under her wing. We became friends. She was still a looming threat to us in the play so we intended to get her caught and pay for what she deserved. Once and for all.
The lights turned on as Liy was standing there for the last time. I went on stage, this time with someone else...

Taco held my hand, taking a deep breath as we walked. I felt nervous but I knew Taco's comfort would help with my minor fears. "Oh, look who it is..." Liy began to speak, turning around and looking at us with a cold expression. I gazed at her, keeping my focus but glancing away once we had made eye contact.

"Liy, we're both done playing your game."

"What was that?" She pretended to look at her nails. "I couldn't understand your annoying language." She sneered, snickering a little. "What do you want, huh? Trying to make fun of me?? That's MY job."

I looked up, taking a deep breath as I went to say my line... It felt off to say it right to her face, yet so smooth. "Everyone knows what you are. Who you are.." I bit my lip. "You aren't welcome in our school after all you've done. Your reign of terror for everyone is OVER." I raised my voice at my end, moving my arm out to gesture what I meant. Taco looked over, surprised.

It was my time to shine... I had spilled all of the rage and sadness I have gained over this fucking nightmare of a school into this scene.

I was so scared...

But I wanted to prove that I was strong.

"Learn how to act better... In another school."

Liy looked at me in disbelief, surprised. "Excuse me??" She crossed her arms. "What the fuck do you mean by that?" Taco grinned. "Oh, you haven't heard?? I thought you were the one supposed to make rumors! You're leaving this school. You just got expelled after someone gave video proof of everything. Right on the internet too!" She spoke. "So, I advise you to pack your bags and leave.."

"..."

Liy didn't say anything, crossing her arms. "Tch, whatever! But just know... I'll come back!"

She went to walk off stage, as Taco and I looked at each other... Joy were in our faces. I could just tell. I went to grab her and hug her tightly, smiling widely. "S-She's gone..." I muttered as we hugged right in the middle of the stage. "Well, that's only thanks to you." Taco playfully replied, going to gaze up at me before parting. "Come on. We have somewhere else to go to..." I looked behind her, pretending to look forward to a better future. Taco nodded. "You're right." She went to grab my hand as both of us walked off the stage, ending the play.

I looked at everyone else as we went to walk off the stage and where the audience chairs were to congratulate each other. It was a celebration... It was really great to be together like this as a class. We were all bonding and knowing each other. I knew how intense things were, glancing over to Liy as she was seated in one of the chairs and was looking away from everyone else. She seemed hurt but... I knew I couldn't just talk to her.

Not after what had happened...

I looked over as Ruby went to run to hug me, thrilled. "That was amazing!! Pence, you did so well!" She enthusiastically said as she held me. I smiled. "Oh, it's no big deal..." I reassured her, looking at everyone else as they were happily doing their own thing. Loser and 8-Ball were both talking to each other while Gelatin was speaking and talking to Dora and Taco.

Things seemed alright...

Everything felt great.

We bonded...

We got to get along, just for one day.

I wish we were all like this... Way before all of this...

Before anyone had murdered.

Before I could speak, I heard a voice. A shiver went down my spine as I looked over to where the voice was coming from. I flinched as I saw him. "Heheh~ Seeing as how you're all already gathered up, I might as well do my very special announcement right here!" Monoroku spoke, hands behind his back as he gave us a sinister smile. Taco looked over, frowning. "What the hell do you want?!" She snapped at him, clearly upset after all of the fun we had being interrupted suddenly.

I looked at everyone else, noticing everyone's nervous faces. I didn't have a good feeling about this at all.

Nope.

To my fears, the feeling I had about this sudden appearance came true...

"It's time to announce the next motive~!"

---

hey! apologies for this taking too long, i got into writer's block in the middle of writing this and i knew i had to finish it as soon as i got my writer's block back.. sorry for the long chapter!

also, new cover... i hope ya enjoy it!! it's by far my favorite one :')

[5] Paper Cut.

I froze up, speechless. Everything was going so well... I frowned, putting my hands in my pockets as he stood up on stage. He loomed over us, laughing from our faded expressions. "Awh, sorry about that little play you were having going on... Impressive, I must say." He clapped a little, keeping an upright position as he moved his hands behind his back and gazed down at all of us. "Now, you all know the deal by now with the motive and all." He sneered, going to take out slips of paper from his pocket. He presented it to all of us.

"What the hell is our new motive now... Better be good, I don't want to waste our goddamn time with someone as goddamn stupid as you." I heard someone say, looking over. I figured the voice was from Liy, clearly ticked.

Gelatin giggled. "Oh, I bet it'll be really interesting!!" He grinned. "I do wonder though.."

"Silence."

He went to move it out, in a card formation. "Walk up and take one each, then I'll explain what's the motive~" He grinned at us, amused from our current states. I glanced around at my fellow classmates, wondering how they were all taking this. I felt the tension... I knew everyone was nervous, hearing all of their soft breaths. I shakingly went to walk up first, taking lead as I went to grab a card from the deck and move back. This gave the signal to everyone else as they collectively got a card. "Feel free to look at it... Do not show anyone else what information is presented on the card~" He grinned sadistically.

I hesitated.

What was even on the goddamn things that could be so important???

I slowly looked down at what was written in the paper slip that I had taken out.

What was written on it surprised me.

"Loser is the mastermind and the one behind the killing game."

I stayed quiet, glancing up a bit as I noticed panicked and uncomfortable glances at everyone else. Something was wrong... I knew there was distrust.

Monoroku smiled. "Oh right, let me explain what this time's motive is! Just for anyone who hadn't quite pieced it together..." He stood up straight, hands behind his back as he looked down at us with a piercing gaze. "The things written on your cards are statements. We don't know if it's true or not... That is something you may find out if you manage to kill someone in a few days."

What?

"S-So wait... If we don't kill then we don't get to know if our card's true-?" Loser anxiously asked. He seemed pretty shaky and startled, which isn't that surprising knowing the situation. Monoroku nodded, giving him a sharp grin. "Indeed! With that, I'm sure one of you will snap sooner or later... What's on those cards is quite valuable."

I frowned a little, gazing down at the card and reading the information once again. It can't be... Did one of them really set up the game? For the rest of them??? That makes no sense. Not at all. I didn't want to believe that Loser had to be the one to set this up. He seemed absolutely terrified over the whole thing but...

Was it an act?

I had a lot of doubt, glancing to the side as I moved the card into my pocket. I looked back up, waiting. There was silence among everyone. You could hear everyone's sharp breathing. This went on for a few moments before the seemingly everlasting quiet had been sharply pierced by the voice of one of us. "Are we dismissed now." 8-Ball spoke up, tampering with his collar as he seemed uncomfortable.

"Oh, correct! You are all dismissed... If you'd like~" He smirked, before laughing maniacally and disappearing in a puff of smoke. We were all left to ourselves. I knew everything was tense. I knew nobody trusted each other... Whatever the fuck was on those slips clearly made an impact. Despite our playful times where we all could unite and just spend some time knowing we worked hard on something and had fun...

It was all shattered.

All of the trust and care we had built for each other had been

shattered as the events of the killing game cycled again and again... One after another, falling and snapping from the pressure and their own peers harming each other. The thought made me feel weak... Helpless. I couldn't do anything to help anyone and I knew it was that bastard's fucking fault.

Maybe even Loser's too. I don't know anymore.

"So uh-" Ruby spoke up, still holding the slip in her hands. She had her hands down, with a worried expression. "Should we just--" She was interrupted as I noticed Liy passing by her. She seemed clearly upset from my brief glance, seeing her face...

I hope she was alright.

She was one of my few closer friends from this place and having to know that she's been separating and staying away had always haunted me. I held my arms. "I-I'm gonna go." I quickly said, dismissing myself as I left the doors of the drama room and left in my own direction. Everything felt faded. I couldn't properly process and understand what my thoughts were as I could feel my heart beating and my body turning numb and shaky. Something felt wrong. So wrong...

I feel so disgusted.

I couldn't figure out who'd strike next.

Everyone seemed so distrusting...

Hell, it could be me. I don't want to think so, though. I knew I had to restrain myself. I knew I had to...

I would never stoop that low.

Not after what had happened to both of my closest friends.

I gripped my hands into fists as I quickly ran downstairs for the first floor. I couldn't think. I speed walked for my room, heading into the hallway where all of the dorms were before making a swift turn for where my room was located. I opened it, slamming the door after, and went to jump myself on the bed and hold in all of the pent-up

emotions.

I felt really upset... So angry... I just wanted to go home. I really did. I hated being stuck here and I just hope I can live through this living nightmare. I laid on my bed, grabbing a pillow and hiding into it as I tried to calm myself down. I was trying to distract myself. I was trying to think of all of the fun things I could do once I left... I don't know if anything would be the same after this...

Probably not.

No.

Definitely not.

Nothing will ever be the same...

Not for me.

Not for anybody who survives.

I sulked quietly, trying to not spill any tears as I drifted off to a peaceful rest...

Where I'd stay safe for another day.

[5] Thin Ice.

I groaned a little, feeling my senses come back to me as I had woken up from my slumber. Everything felt blurry as I tiredly looked around. I couldn't quite remember what had happened last night, my memory being faded and dark...

Oh...

Right.

I rubbed my eyes as I went to get out of bed, stretching my arms out a little before heading into my private bathroom. I moved my hand over to the faucet, moving my hand back as it twisted to slowly make the water turn on. I observed tiredly as the water began flowing down, going to move my hands to grab a handful of water before leaning in and slamming it into my face. I wanted to quickly wash myself up, groaning as I felt the cold water hit my face and drip down into the sink.

I waited for a few moments before turning around, grabbing the towel hanging up nearby and covering my face with it. I moved it around, drying it before putting it back on the rack now my face was dry. I frowned a little to myself, trying to keep optimistic thoughts in mind as I knew today was a new day.

I looked around a little, pondering. I sorta don't want to go outside of my room today. Something filled me with dread, just telling me to stay. On the other hand though... I knew I wanted to stumble off and see my classmates. I knew it may just be the last time I do every moment I spend with just one of them. I don't want the last moments they see of... me. To be something bad or unpleasant.

I held my arm as I slowly opened the door to my room, going to leave and close it. I headed for the stairs. I didn't feel hungry... In fact, I felt sick to the stomach. I really didn't want anyone else to die. People

don't deserve to.

"I miss her..."

I murmured quietly, leaving it out there in the thick silence. I suddenly had a change of heart as I figured right now probably wasn't the time to see the others. I knew everything was tense. There was only a ticking bomb, just waiting to explode as soon as a murder occurred.

I headed for the 4th floor of the school, hands in pockets. I wanted to check out the office before heading to go and hang out with my classmates. The plan for the day didn't sound too bad... After a bit of climbing up the stairs, I had headed down the hallway and soon reached my destination.

Four's Office.

I had only briefly visited here before to investigate and see what I could find. I wanted to mostly try to think to myself here... I still wasn't able to tell much about Monoroku and I wanted answers.

The stench of disgusting dry blood had filled my nostrils as I felt dread and terror hanging over me. I pushed past it, knowing I hadn't quite looked everywhere here... Everything about this place meant bad news, from how fucked up the office was to the photograph I remembered to had picked up with all of their faces... Gone. I didn't know where any of them were anymore, especially where the kind Six that was a part of the staff were anymore. The feeling of kindness suddenly came to me, though I knew I wanted to give him none of it.

I was filled with anger and sorrow. I lost *everything* because of this. My friends... My life... So much more. I had a life to live out there but I was restrained by the chains of this killing game. I held back the tears as I walked towards the desk, making small steps. I was clearly hesitant, knowing that I hadn't ever looked there. I knew the photos I had seen before were still on the display shelves at the corners of my eyes. I ignored it.

I wanted to ignore all of it.

My main focus was this.

I just needed to know what had happened. Why we were here... Who really was behind this. I pulled out the slip of paper I was given during the motive yesterday, reading the text once again. The term *Mastermind* had been rubbing me the wrong way as soon as I had seen it.

Was there really one?

I really wanted to doubt Loser was behind this but... People were unpredictable. Anybody could do anything at this point, it was a stressful situation. I wouldn't exactly be too surprised if it was a mere persona but...

I think I was letting my imagination get ahead of me.

Murder *is* very much possible and I needed to keep my guard up. Who knows if I could be the next victim...

Looking forward, I observed the desk. It didn't seem like much, if anything, had changed since my last visit. I began to walk around the desk, moving to behind it where the principal's chair was. I pushed it to the side, letting the wheels slide it gently away from it. I noticed multiple drawers on either side, most likely storing multiple things.

I hesitated, about to grab and open one before I perked up at the sound of my name being called.

"Pencil?"

I raised an eyebrow, looking up. "What is it..." I noticed that in the doorway of the office had Loser and Gelatin were standing there. Loser was messing with his oversized coat, letting out a sigh of relief. "Thank goodness... W-We thought you maybe *died*."

"Yeah, what gives? You're usually always at the cafeteria eating, dude."

I was a little surprised over their concern, frowning. I remembered the slip of paper, shrugging and backing away from the desk. "I wasn't hungry. I wanted to come here and look around." I glanced back to the desk, deciding I shouldn't for now. "I'm done anyways, we could head back."

Gelatin crossed his arms, raising an eyebrow. "Oh sure, definitely... You could've told us!" He pouted. Loser looked over. "C-Calm down." He tried to reassure him, patting his back.

"Here, just go and tell the others that she's okay. I'll hang out with her."

"Fine..."

Gelatin had rolled his eyes, turning away and leaving. Loser waved as he walked off, before looking back over at me. I headed back over, relieved to be leaving the room. "I'm sure that he's been on edge after everything... Don't worry too much about it." He said. I nodded, understanding what he meant. "Yeah, don't worry. He's always been off to me." I went to leave the room, closing the door after me as I stood right by him. Loser looked over curiously. "Huh? What do you mean?"

"Uh." I didn't really want to talk bad about any of my classmates, shrugging. "It was just a hunch, but never mind. Come on, wanna head to the library?" I suggested. Loser seemed a little skeptical of my words but seemed to have relaxed after my question. "Hm? Oh, o-of course I'd love to go there..." He smiled. I gave a small grin back as I took initiative and walked for the stairs, hearing Loser's footsteps along with mine as we went down for the floor below. I went to be cautious, holding onto the railing fairly tightly as I made my descent. I glanced back, making sure Loser was still there.

Luckily, he was.

I went to move my hands into my pockets once again, comfortable with the warmth it gave to my hands. I soon entered the library, going to sit down and pull out the chair beside me for him to sit in. I observed as Loser stumbled into the library, seeing a small smile grow on his face as he seemed comfortable in this place.

Not surprising...

He went to sit down, looking over at me. "T-This place always felt comfortable for me..." He murmured. "Th-The only place I could go to get away from everything... Mmn, I miss h-home.." He went to lay down a little on the table, crossing his arms. He seemed a little upset. I felt empathetic at that moment, sighing and going to scoot my chair to be closer to him. I patted his back gently.

"We all do."

I knew we all did... Things suddenly went silent, as I glanced to the side worriedly. I hoped Ruby was alright. I knew Loser wasn't really the strongest of the bunch, definitely not mentally at least. I envied him a little for not losing anyone too close to him like I have...

"D-Do you think the others would *kill* to get home..."

I looked over, raising an eyebrow. "Huh? Why..." I squinted at him, clearly skeptical. He went to sit up,

"I-I was just wondering!-" He began to act defensively. "I... My head's been a mess since the last trial and all." He admitted. "We killed the youngest of us just like that... I-Isn't that messed up in its own right? I know it's a killing game and all but- I-I don't know what's next anymore..." He seemed pretty shaky. "S-Sorry for pouring it all on you!- You probably don't trust me anymore..."

"Well..." I hesitated.

Loser frowned. "I-It's fine... I think I'm gonna go head to my room." He went to stand from his seat, giving me a small nod. "Thanks for letting me talk to you... I hope you have a nice night." He spoke before turning away and walking off.

I moved my hand out, watching as he left. I wasn't sure what to say...

He seemed off.

Definitely off.

I wasn't sure if it was just what he claimed was bothering him or... Something else. I would have to think about this for a while. I went to get up from my seat, going to push both of the chairs we had sat in back in before heading back to my room. I did the usual nighttime routine.

I decided to go to sleep early, planning to rise for an early breakfast tomorrow.

[5] Regret.

Morning once again. Time went so fast now... I rubbed my eyes as I did the usual. I went to comfortably adjust my coat before heading outside. I decided to not skip breakfast as clearly that seemed like a red flag. I was a little hungry anyways...

I left my room and headed to the cafeteria early in the morning, seeing basically nobody except for Gelatin and Taco.

"Huh? Oh, hey Pencil!"

"Seems somebody's up early today~ Is it because you're too scared of being forgotten and thought that you're dead?" Gelatin mocked.

I raised an eyebrow. "No." I rolled my eyes. "What's for breakfast today, anyway?"

Taco shrugged. "Uhh... Nothing much, really. Just some snack bars I found in the cupboards. Dunno if they're stale but we'll just hafta see." I nodded, going to move my hand out. "Throw it at me." I called, as she went to go turn around and grab one that was lying on the table beside her before tossing it over to me. I went to catch it, nearly stumbling and missing but holding it tightly in my hand. "Thanks."

"Of course!"

I went to unwrap it from its wrapper, going to eat it. I noticed Gelatin leaning over, just a few feet away from me. I nearly dropped my bar when I had seen him. He raised an eyebrow, snickering a bit. "Cat got your tongue?" He playfully nudged at me. He went to stand up properly, adjusting his suspenders and glancing over to Taco. "When was she so jumpy?" Taco frowned. "You just scared her, that's all!" She said in my defense, as I nodded. "You shouldn't have fucking scared me like that..." I growled a little, annoyed. I went to keep eating the bar as I waited for his response, noting to myself that it

was a little stale. Though it was certainly better than nothing. "Wow, I'm sorry that observing you is suddenly so scary!" He dramatically moved his hand to his chest, pretending as if he was being offended. He was clearly being sarcastic, which made me even more upset. "Yeah, whatever..." I looked away as I heard footsteps as more people had walked into the cafeteria.

I went to glance over, seeing as Dora and Ruby had walked in. The two were chatting with each other. "Hey!" I called over, grinning a little. "Where's everyone else?" Dora looked over. "Oh!- Uh, I think I saw the others not here come out of their rooms but head off to different directions." She said, rubbing the back of her head. "I don't really know what they're up to but I decided to not ask..."

"I see."

Taco grinned. "So like, do you both want some snacks? Couldn't find much for breakfast so it'll do." I leaned back a little, going to pull out a chair to sit in. "A bit stale but still fine to eat." I commented.

Dora smiled a little at us. "Seems nice, but I'll pass..." Ruby grinned. "Ooh!! I'll catch!" She went to move both of her hands up, crouching down and going into a pose to try to catch it. Taco chuckled a bit. "Okay then! Catch!" She went to do an underpass throw, right in her arms. I smirked. "Nice job!" I complimented, as Dora went to pat Ruby's back as she had caught it.

"Oh, thanks..." She rubbed the back of her head. "I'm sorta used to throwing back at home. That's all."

"Well, that's cool to know." I went to finish the bar, going to stuff it in my pocket messily. "Anyways, I'm gonna go look around and walk to get some exercise. I'll probably see you all during lunch." I waved at the others. Ruby nodded. "See ya!" Taco nodded, as Gelatin snickered a little. "Hope you don't die~" He teased. I went to turn to leave until...

"Wait!"

I glanced back. "Huh? What's up." I frowned, wondering who called for me.

Dora looked to the side. "Well uh- Could I come with you?" She awkwardly asked. "Oh uh, sure." I smiled a little. It's been a while since I even talked with her alone so it'd be cool to catch up on things and talk about stuff. I always wanted to know a bit more about her too... It must've been rough after all of the shit that happened with her brother. "Thanks..." She smiled a little, going to speed-walk over to where I was before we both began to walk together out of the cafeteria. I could hear Gelatin behind us calling something out for us, though I had blocked out what he had said.

We were now in the hallways, walking silently. It felt pretty awkward so I decided to take the step of beginning some conversation. "So... How have you been..?" Dora glanced over to me, shrugging. "Fine... Nothing too important has been happening." She spoke, seemingly distracted about something. "You?"

"Could be better..."

"Yeah, I'm assuming it's all because of the situation we're put in, right?"

"Yep. Well, uh... Sorta."

"I-It's fine if you don't want to talk about it... I know some things are really sensitive and I don't want to force you to share it." She said sympathetically. She seemed to understand what I was saying, it really felt comforting. I nodded a little. "Hah, thanks. I guess it's just weird not having much contact with the outside world for like, who knows how long." I looked away a little, thinking about what I had just said for a brief moment. "I kinda am used to it... Though, I guess your ultimate does sorta involve being out there in the public."

"Yeah..." We kept walking down the hallways, chatting about minor things. It was mostly about ourselves... Which wasn't too bad, I was able to know a bit more about where Dora was and what she did before everything. "Wait, you used to go to Freedsmart?" I was a little surprised. "Uhh... Yeah! For a few years, but I transferred to where my brother went after." She explained. "It's called uhh... Elk Valley Institute. I recognized some other people here who attended there but..." She slowly went silent, hesitating. I raised an eyebrow, before having a small realization.

"..Did all of them pass away?"

"Y-Yeah... It's just me now.." She sighed. "I'll just have to keep moving on... I mean, that's what I kinda have been doing nowadays." I observed her as she had said that, not knowing how to respond. I was trying to form the right words but... Nothing really could come out. I felt miserable for bringing it up now, deciding to change the subject. "So uh... Have you checked on Liy lately?"

"Oh, her? Mmmnn... No, she's been ignoring me and just doing her own thing. I wanted to ask her what she was up to this morning but she only gave a small glance before leaving." She explained pitifully. "You too? Hm..." I frowned a little at the news. "Maybe she's finding a way to escape... She seemed pretty willing to leave and I don't think she'd kill just to leave."

"...Unless you're desperate."

"I guess... But anyone can be desperate! Even you could be desperate enough." She looked over at me nervously. "I would never kill." I growled a little. "I'll admit some of the past motives were sorta tempting but I will not kill. Never after what happened to those two." I defensively said. "Alright... I believe you." She seemed a little wary, going to stay quiet.

The rest of the walk was in complete and awkward silence. It was getting around lunchtime, so it was probably a good idea to get going back. "Hey, uh..." I looked over at the nearby clock. "It's time for lunch, you heard what I said back at the cafeteria."

Dora was pretty late to respond, taking a few seconds before looking at me. "Oh right! Alright then..." She went to grab my hand as the both of us were back at the cafeteria. Taco was there, but everyone else had seemed to have left. "Hey! Nice to see you two back." She grinned, sitting on the table as she saw us walk in. "Have you been here the entire time?-"

"Yup! Nothing else to do so I decided to stay here! The other two left on their own adventures." She smiled. "We gotta go check the kitchen for what's there to eat though."

"Sounds good to me... Well, Dora. How about you go and check with Taco? I'll go and wait for the others." Dora smiled a little. "Mm, that seems like a good idea. Come on Taco." She went to begin heading to the kitchen as Taco got off of the table and went to follow after. I chuckled at the two before pulling out a nearby chair and waiting. Soon enough, people began to come inside the cafeteria. It sorta seemed like a role call for the rest of us.

For the first time today, I saw Liy. She was silent as she pulled out her own chair and sat, far away from me. Ruby and Gelatin both collectively came into the room next. The two seemed to be laughing and enjoying themselves... I felt a small twinge of envy, but pushed it away. It was probably just because one of my best friends was with somebody I didn't like. After a bit, Taco had come out of the kitchen. "Alright, everyone! I was able to find some soda and some bags of chips for lunch! Not much, but it'll do for what we have left." She announced.

I nodded. "Fine by me!" Ruby went to sit by me, nodding. "Yup! Hopefully it's good chips." She smiled. "I loveeeee cheesy chips!" She eagerly said. "Right, well... Catch these then!" She went to head into the kitchen before coming out with a bag of chips and throwing it over. Ruby raised up her hand, catching it. She lowered it down, opening it up and taking a chip to eat. "Mmmm... Yummy!" She happily chirped.

I giggled a little. "Sweet... Try to get some more for us!" I grinned before I heard somebody run in. I flinched a little, looking over. 8-Ball was standing there, panting a little. "U-Uh..." He went to look at every one. "Have any of you seen Loser..?" He asked, seemingly tired and worried. I was a little confused, shaking my head. "Well no... Why.."

"W-We both decided this morning in the dormitory hallway to meet up in the library but he never came... I don't know what happened to him and I-" He began to break out into tears, hiding himself in his sleeves. "C-Can you guys ju-just help me find him..."

Everyone went silent as Taco and Dora walked out of the kitchen.

"I got the chips!!-" She stopped in her tracks. "Wait, what happened?"

"Loser's missing." Liy lowly spoke. "We should all split into groups to search the school for him." I nodded. "Agreed, I'll go with Ruby and Taco." I volunteered. Taco nodded. "R-Right... I guess you're going with 8-Ball then, right?" She nudged Dora a bit. "H-Huh? Oh yeah... He needs some reassurance." She calmly spoke. "Then that leaves Liy and Gelatin."

"Ri-Right well... C-Come on then... I just want to know that he's okay-" I went to stand, going to wait for Taco and Ruby to meet up before we left. Things were really scary for everyone... For all we know...

Loser could actually be dead.

But that doesn't make sense... Surely if he was really the one behind all of this, he'd make sure he would survive...

Right?

I felt a twinge of guilt as we were looking around the first floor. "D-Do you think he's alright?? I really hope so! He seems like a nice guy." Ruby spoke. "Wellll... Wouldn't that sorta just- I dunno... Make him a bigger target?"

"There's a chance..."
But I didn't want to believe it.

The feeling of dread got worse and worse as I suddenly had the smell of blood hit me. "GH- Do any of you guys smell that?!" Ruby was trying to cover her nose using her sleeves. Taco raised an eyebrow. "It's coming from there!" She pointed to an open classroom door...

...

...

We all hurried into the classroom, afraid of what we'd find.

...

...

*Loser's dead body laid there. Right in the corner of the classroom as soon as you walked in and turned to look at the side. In his open hand was a knife, with blood spilling out from his chest. Beside him was an open notebook, with the words "**IM SORRY**" written in messy handwriting.*

I covered my mouth, tearing up. Holy shit... He really was dead. Ruby screamed suddenly, running out of the door in terror. I assumed she was going to get the others... Taco looked away. "...Yikes." She seemed pretty upset.

The next thing I knew, everyone was gathered by the front of the door. I looked at everyone else dullfully, upset with the news we were about to tell them until...

The PDA's began to beep. I looked at everyone else hesitantly. "I-I'll get out mine..." I muttered, taking it out from my pocket and going to show what it was displaying to everyone else. I looked away from everyone and the body, trying to process everything. I couldn't see it but... I could hear the words that I wished to never hear again.

"Oh? What's this? A body has been discovered! You will have time right after the body is discovered. Which, you may use for anything! You should try to find clues on who the culprit should be because... A class trial will be held. You all must report into the trial room ASAP as soon as you hear my announcement, if not... You'll be... Let's say, PUNISHED! Now, ta ta!"

I heard the PDA turn off, warily looking at everyone else. 8-Ball sniffled. "..L-Loser..." He pushed through everyone else, shoving me to the side as he ran up and fell to his knees at the sight of the body. I never saw him that emotional... The two were fairly close so it was understandable. "I think I'm going to look around to see if I can find any evidence outside. You guys do uh, whatever." I spoke, quickly going to leave. I couldn't stand seeing him there upset...

It made me feel so guilty.

I held my arms, shuttering a bit. I went to head straight for the kitchen, hoping for some sort of snack to get my mind off of things

before I went ahead to investigate. It wasn't like me but... I couldn't stand this anymore. I needed a distraction.

I noticed the bags of chips on the kitchen counter, probably the ones Taco and Dora were going to hand to everyone. I looked through the pile and popped one open, looking around. Not much seemed to have changed but I noticed something particular... The knife block seemed to be missing a good amount of knives, which was... something. I didn't really think it was too much honestly. There were knives missing before and stuff. I went to leave the kitchen, leaving the chips there on the counter.

I wasn't sure how to process anything, moving my hands in my pockets as I was heading back to the crime scene. Well, that was sorta until...

"Another job well done! Don't you agree?～"

---

ew motivation whats that
FINALLY A CHAPTER LMFAO WELL UH ENJOY HAHAHHAHA *jazz hands*

[5] Desperate Measures.

Huh...?

The voice felt familiar, as I kept listening. I wasn't quite sure who I was hearing yet, though this seemed super important. I trembled a little, going to stop myself from walking to make sure they didn't hear me as I kept listening on.

"I guess..."

It seemed to be a conversation between two people. I needed to know what was going on, taking a quiet breath of air to prepare myself for what I'd be seeing and hearing.

I crept around the corner, skeptical. I raised an eyebrow, hiding behind the corner as I was listening to what was being heard. "Oh the despair on everyone's faces... It's truly wonderful!" A voice exclaimed, laughing. "I'm so glad this was set up... Seeing everyone's pitiful faces as they all fell one by one... I can't believe NOBODY has realized shit!" I tensed up, shaking...

what... the fuck...

I went to look around the corner to see who was really saying those words, my body filled with anger as I heard somebody... insane enough to just say that.

Gelatin was standing there, his back turned away from me. Though I could see that he was the one who had clearly said all of it. Monoroku was standing there, hands to his sides as he was observing him. He seemed too distracted with the conversation to have noticed me, but this in itself was suspicious... I knew Gelatin was untrustworthy but...

...

Wait.

This really can't be it...

This was Gelatin's fault...

ALL OF IT WAS HIS FUCKING FAULT.

I wasn't sure what to say, as I kept hiding and listening to what he had to say. "Well, it's time to see which fucking idiot actually had fallen for the motive this time! Hm... Who would you say did it?" He asked, leaning on the wall. Monoroku frowned. "I don't know, nor care. I already saw the footage of who did it and I'll make sure to keep it a secret."

"Awh, you're no fun... Well anyhow, I should probably get back with the others to help with the stupid investigation. Gotta make sure they

aren't trying to break any rules after all~!"

"Right, right... I'll meet you at the trial room." He muttered. Gelatin nodded, before turning and walking towards my direction. I flinched a bit, going to hide. I knew I couldn't hide for long... I knew I had to run or confront him and I think I knew EXACTLY what choice I was going to do. I had my hands into fists, out of anger. He was the one behind all of this. All of their deaths. It could've been prevented if the sadistic piece of shit never did any of this. I looked away, before stepping forward and revealing myself in front of the two.

Gelatin seemed surprised to see me, stopping and messing with his bowtie. "Ohhh.. Hey Pence! What's up?" I glared. "I know what you said." I had my hands into fists, shaking a bit out of anger. "YOU KILLED THEM." I accused, taking a step forward and pointing towards him. Gelatin took a few steps back, chuckling. "Whaaat?? What are you talking about? I just ran into the freakshow while I was looking for evidence like you!" He tried to excuse, clearly thinking he could get away... Not on my watch.

"Stop lying to me."

"I'm not?? Jeez, what got you so heated? I didn't do anything!"

"..."

I twitched a bit, before growling and going to run up to him and grab him by the throat. I was blinded by rage. He was caught off guard as I did so, gripping his neck tightly. I knew I was fucking killing him...

But that was the point.

Gelatin laughed, tearing up a little as he stared at me in surprise. I couldn't feel anything but rage as I kept my hands wrapped around his neck. I wasn't afraid.

No more.

I had lost nearly all of my goddamn friends to this maniac who thought it was GODDAMN FUCKING FUNNY. I glared at him, shaking. "Y-You fucking monster... You DESERVE NOTHING AFTER THE SHIT YOU DID!" I spat, watching as he was choking a bit in my hands. I couldn't care anymore for stupid rules...

Or being punished or executed for commiting a murder.

I knew Monoroku was watching all of this, but no longer did I care.

All I wanted as HIM TO BE FUCKING DEAD.

Gelatin seemed to have noticed that Monoroku was watching, causing him to squirm even more and begin laughing. He had a crazed look on his face, trying to push me away as he was no longer paying attention to me.

But to him.

"DON'T YOU SEE??? THIS IS WHY YOU STARTED THIS FUCKING GAME WITH ME!!"

"ALL OF THESE SICK FUCKERS... CAN'T FUCKING LEARN TO APPRECIATE SHIT UNTIL THE DAY THEY FEEL TRUE DESPAIR... THAT'S THE TRUE FUCKING JOY OF SEEING THESE PEOPLE SUFFER AND LEARN A GODDAMN LESSON!!" He kept laughing.

What I even knew of Gelatin was false. The mysterious jokester kid had much more sinister intentions behind the words he say... I should've known.

This was planned all from the beginning, wasn't it? I kept staring at him, tears welling up in my eyes as I knew I couldn't let go or give him even a fucking chance to live. I wasn't aware of what was happening in my surroundings anymore, using the very last of my strength to made sure he paid...

"So... Th-This is really how it ends- H-Huh?-" He was still laughing a little, staring at me. "..W-Well done..." He went to clap a little, moving his hands behinds behind his back afterward. I was a little surprised, confused mostly. I had no idea what he was planning, keeping my tight grasp as I was trying to kill him. "You goddamn asshole..." I growled, feeling droplets of tears fall down to the ground.

"Well... Ev-Even if I am, I-I won't let you get away hands free... After all, there's always consequences to breaking rules~"

What the fuck did that mean?

"S-S-So..." He had seemed to grab something from behind his back, frowning a little and biting his lip. I watched him, still holding him.. He seemed nearly out of air. I was trying to finish the job. His frown soon twisted into a smile, a huge taunting one. I was a little intimidated from the sudden change of mood, as I noticed him starting to form words from his mouth.

"P-Pencil..."

Silence and confusion soon followed as Gelatin glanced to the side before looking back at me.

He then showed me what he had in his hand, moving it out from behind his back.

"...What the hell--" I had realized soon what it was...

He chuckled, before he bursted out in laughter.

"I-I-IF I'M GOING TO DIE, I'M T-TAKING YOU DOWN WITH ME!-"

I stared at him in shock, not able to form any words from my mouth.

I grabbed his throat, keeping it in a tight grasp as he quickly aimed the gun towards me... I was slowly regaining my senses of the surroundings, seeing nobody nearby except for Monoroku. He in the corner of my eye, staring at me in fear before running off. I didn't know anymore... What was going on. Everything felt blurry.

All that was going in my mind was to just KILL HIM.

I wanted this over so badly...

I-

kitt

...

...

...

I didn't know what happened, all I had remembered was that I let go of his throat and fell back...

Knowing that my time was up.

FINALLY I WAS ABLE TO UPLODA THIS PART.... i finihsed this a bit ago actually :') this was the twist ive been literallyt taunting to all of my friends and im so happy to show you this!! yeah uh, im a protag killer fucking fight me.

[5] Final Notes.

Ruby looked around warily, "P-Pencil?" She was wandering around the halls, looking for any sign of her. She hadn't seen her in a good while, knowing she had left to investigate... But she knew by then she would've come back or given her some sort of sign she was okay. She was on her own as she was walking towards the cafeteria to look for if she went there to eat when she had noticed something... particular.

At one of the hallways that had split off into it's own branch, a pool of blood was spilling out. She had noticed it almost instantly, tilting her head and staring at where it was. She was confused and hesitant... She didn't know if she wanted to see what was there, scared. "..I-" She took a deep breath as she began to approach the entrance of the hallway, not able to see anything due to the walls blocking what was hidden inside unless looking closer...

What she saw, terrified her.

Ruby covered her mouth, nearly shrieking at the sight of two dead bodies.

Pencil's body laid lifelessly in the small pool of blood that Ruby had noticed earlier. On her forehead was where a gun had shot through, her eyes open lifelessly. Gelatin was by her, his eyes closed and he had a small frown on his face. By both of the bodies was a gun, which was being soaked with the blood that came from Pencil's wound.

Ruby looked away, tearing up. She knew nobody else had seen it when the body discovery announcement had never came out, just from looking at the blood spilling out she knew this was decently recent. She tried to wipe her tears using her sleeves, running to try to get the others. She knew the others were in the classroom where Loser's body was, since she had told them to stay there as she searched for Pencil. The thought of one of her closest friends being dead hurt her inside, though, she knew she had to focus on the current situation at hand.

8-Ball was still weeping quietly, as he was right by Loser's deceased body. He was examining him, trying to find any clues on him. He was trying to stay strong, but tears kept streaming down his face. He couldn't hold it in any longer. Taco was beside him, trying to help him find any clues on what could've happened from just looking closely at the body. "Huh... Do you usually bleed from the head and mouth?" She pointed out, raising an eyebrow. 8-Ball wasn't sure how to respond, keeping quiet. Dora was looking around the classroom a bit, trying to find anything that could lead to any murders. Liy was leaning against the wall, her arms crossed. "It's clear that he killed

himself." She muttered. "This'll be easy to go through..."

"Maybe? I-I don't really know." Dora looked back at her. "8-Ball clearly wasn't told anything about this and Loser and he were... really close." She acknowledged.

"Right.... Well, look, we can talk about this at the trial. I think we investigated the body enough." Taco patted 8-Ball's back, before parting from him. "Do you think the other 3's fine?"

"P-Pencil has kinda been gone for awhile-"

"Well, Ruby was looking for her. Was she not?" Liy raised an eyebrow, before turning o Taver at the door. "Speak of the devil, look who's here." She frowned, noticing that Pencil wasn't with her and she was crying. Dora had noticed it instantly. "H-Huh? What's up? Did you not find Pencil...?" She went to go over to Ruby as she was sniffling a little.

"J-Just follow me... Please." She seemed desperate to show them something, looking away. "It's important." Taco glanced back at 8-Ball. "I don't know if he'll budge but... I'll try to get him. Come on, it'll be alright." She spoke quietly to him, going to slowly get up and try to take out her hand. 8-Ball looked over tiredly, sighing. "...Ffine.." He murmured as he went to get up by taking her hand. "Let's go see what you mean..." He quietly said to himself. Ruby went to turn away, beginning to lead the others where she just was before. Where the bodies were. Everyone else seemed uncertain of what they'd find, but clearly from Ruby's expression, it didn't mean good news at all.

After a small bit of walking, they had reached where the two bodies were. Liy flinched a little, surprised. "...More bodies?" She seemed a little confused. "And I thought Roboty killing two people was a lot." She murmured quietly to herself. "Well, what are we meant to do with this information?" Taco covered her face using her sweater. "Nng... Well I-" Suddenly, Monoroku had approached the group from behind. He coughed a little, gaining the attention of the students and having his hands behind his back. Taco looked over, a little surprised to see him in person. "H-Huh?"

"...You should know very well by now what this means." He had a

grim expression on his face, frowning at them. It wasn't like him... It wasn't even like him during the surprise murders. "Two bodies may have been discovered. Well... Since this is a case where *multiple killers* are involved, I must instate a new rule for clarification." He took a deep breath. "Only the killer of the first murder, must be found. Your investigation period will be extended for a little longer for you to investigate the two new bodies, but once time is up, it is heavily requested you meet in the trial room. Consequences will be held if you refuse to attend the class trial." He firmly stated, narrowing his eyes down at them. "I'll meet you all later..." He turned away, before walking off. It confused the students a bit, raising even more questions.

"...M-Multiple killers!?"

"Which of us even killed them..."

"...I just want to know who killed him..."

Liy rolled her eyes a little at all of their statements. "This is surprising, but we must keep on. We have some time to investigate so let's use that time well." She explained. "Things clearly seem off with Monoroku, but we can question him once the trial begins."

"...I-I guess you're right..." Dora murmured, looking down at the two bodies. "Let's see here..." She went to crouch down, looking for any clues. Taco huffed. "Well, I'm going to keep looking around for any clues. Hopefully no more of us die..." She announced, before leaving to the cafeteria. Liy went to lean on the wall, observing Dora as she was looking for anything. 8-Ball huffed a bit, glancing away and sniffling a bit before heading back to the classroom where Loser's body had laid to grieve for a little longer. Ruby crossed her arms, going to go and look as well. She felt hesitant looking at Pencil's dead body... Though she knew that it would be one of the last ever times she'd even see her at all. "Huh..?" She went to look through her pockets, finding a piece of note hidden inside of it. "What's this-" She unravelled it, to see the note that was from the motive. She quickly dropped it out of surprise from reading it, watching as the blood began to soak the piece of paper.

Dora looked over, surprised. "Huh?" She glanced down at the paper.

"What was that...?"

Ruby stared at it lifelessly, not having processed what she had read. "I-..." She looked away. "It was for the motive... That's all." She refused to tell them what she had seen. At least not now. Dora nodded a little. "...I see." She went to get up. "There isn't much we can get out of this that isn't obvious from first glances." She spoke, hands to her sides. Ruby went to pick up the gun hesitantly, looking at it. "It still seems loaded with stuff-" She was looking at it, pointing it towards herself out of curiosity. "Ruby, be careful!" Dora worriedly said, going to quickly snatch it off of her and stuff it in her bag. "I-I don't want you to accidentally injuire yourself... Or even worse." She was uncomfortable with the thought.

Liy raised an eyebrow. "You guys done yet?" She went to stop leaning, moving her hands in her pockets. She seemed a little tired. "Let's just get this case over with... Loser is obviously the culprit and that's it. We don't even need to figure out what happened with *these* two." She glanced a little at Pencil's body... She felt a twinge of guilt, but pushed it away. She knew moving on was the best option and she'd have to take it. "It's better if we do try to find out what happened to OUR friend." Dora frowned. "B-But you're right, hopefully this shouldn't be too difficult to figure out." She rubbed the back of her head nervously.

Ruby smiled. "Don't worry! We totally got this!" She tried to be optimistic. "Anywayssss-" Before she could finish what she was going to say, the PDA's began to beep once more. Liy went to take out hers, looking down at it with boredom. She knew the routine by now. They've done it time and time again... It was so tiring to all of them. The trio had huddled up together, looking down at the small handheld screen. "...Hello, students." Monoroku was sitting at where the class trial seat was. "Please report to the trial room as time for investigation is up." He formally said, crossing his legs and avoiding eye contact with whatever was recording him. "Our fifth class trial will be held once all 5 students have arrived and are at their podiums. Be on time, or else I will have to take action to make sure you follow the rules... I guess." He went to make a gesture with his hand, dismissing the camera as the PDA had turned off.

"Is it me or is he acting... really off?" Ruby tilted her head.

"I-It seems like something's bothering him..."

"Well girls, this is a question we may find out at the class trial. So come on now, we'll probably meet 8-Ball and Taco at the trial room." She urged, beginning to walk to where the mentioned room was. She had moved the PDA back in her pocket, leaving with the two others as they followed.

This would be the final class trial.
The biggest life or death situation for all 5 of the students.

[5] Fifth Case.

All 5 of the students had gathered at the entrance of the trial room. They didn't look at each other as they had all entered and taken their spots. The majority of them were dead now... One of them may possibly join them now. Monoroku was sitting where he usually did, sighing. "...Alright well then." He crossed his legs, looking down at all of them. "Erm, *he* told me to always repeat it every time we did this so... Just bare with me here." Taco raised an eyebrow. "Wai-"

"Loser was murdered. Simple as that. He died from an injury. Whoever had done it is the blackened, the rest of the students must determine and vote them out. If you do, the blackened will be punished. Though, if the students fail to determine who the blackened is, everyone but the blackened will be punished, and the blackened will go on to graduate and be told if the slip of paper they had was true or not. Without further ado, we shall begin if there are no questions. Understand?"

Taco frowned. "Yes, we all understand. But what do you mean by 'he?'" She leaned on her podium, intrigued.

"That will be answered in the trial... With that out of the way, here we go." He grabbed the gavel, raising it up before harshly hitting it downwards. The trial had begun and now they had to use their wits and knowledge of this and the past cases to figure out what had happened.

-- WHO KILLED **LOSER**? --

"So, let's get to the point then, huh?" Liy began, leaning on her podium. "Three murders had happened today. Two during our investigation." She frowned a little.

"W-Well, yeah... But Monoroku said we only needed to find the culprit behind Loser's, right?" Dora murmured, glancing anxiously at

the remaining survivors. There were so few of them compared to the beginning now...

"...Mhm." 8-Ball was still sniffling, feeling agony from his closest friend's murder.

"Well, that's quite easy." Liy huffed. "He simply killed himself. Now I believe we should focus on the other two though... Their deaths were quite sudden, I highly doubt the culprit would've intended to kill three people."

"Obviously, didn't Monoroku tell us that it was like... multiple murderers involved in this case?" Taco commented. "So this isn't like whatever happened with Roboty where it was the same person. Uh, assuming that Gelatin and Pencil weren't killed by the same person." She shrugged. "I dunno... Maybe one of us killed them."

Dora glanced away from the names of the deceased. "Maybe...?"

"I highly doubt that's the case." Liy sneered. "Most of us were in the room Loser's murder took place dealing with the investigation there. If this was the case the only murderer of those two would be *Ruby*."

"...H-Huh??" Ruby perked up, a little anxious. She seemed a little zoned out, looking quickly back at everyone else. "It's obviously not me! Why would I kill Pencil?!"

"...She does have a point," 8-Ball spoke up. "L-let's not accuse anyone of killing people yet. We don't even know what had happened to the bodies..."

"Yeah yeah, whatever... Since you guys are so desperate let's actually figure out how Loser ended his own life." Liy growled.

"...W-Well. There were clearly those multiple stab wounds in his chest." Dora seemed to be trying to remember things.

Ruby nodded a little, paying attention to what they were all saying. "That kinda does explain a bit! So, that's it right?? I mean... Maybe Loser just felt off and all-"

8-Ball slammed his hands down on his podium suddenly, loudly.

Liy was taken aback, shocked. "What was that for?!-"

"...I'd like to point out one VERY important detail you all are missing. It wasn't very clear but he was bleeding from the head. Something had hit him there, hard enough to make him bleed a little there."

"Wait, what?" Taco tilted her head. "There's no way he would've done that to himself. He couldn't have just struck himself in the head then stabbed multiple times in the chest."

"T-That doesn't explain the note..." Dora murmured. "...I-I do think I know what had hit him, though."

"...Uh, what?" Liy squinted. "Well, sure, spit it out on what you found."

"A chair was moved a good amount away from its desk... The leg had a bit of red substance, w-which is definitely blood looking back."

"...So. One of you had fucking killed him." 8-Ball stared with a deadpan look at all of them.

"That includes you, y'know..." Ruby murmured. "Though, I really don't think it's you!"

"Just because it seems like he morally wouldn't doesn't mean he didn't do it." Liy spat. "Morally, none of us would've murdered but somebody clearly had... Albeit be himself or not."

"So we at least have a bit of an idea on what had happened to Loser... What the hell happened with Gelatin and Pencil then?" Taco sounded worried. "I mean... It'd be at least do us something good if we figured out what happened there."

"We were sorta not given much 'extra time' to search but..." She glanced over to Monoroku. She noticed he was distracted, glancing away from the students. She figured it wasn't a good idea to point it out.

"Speaking of that, uh, weren't we going to question him or..." Taco rubbed the back of her head.

8-Ball frowned. "It's best if we give him space. Something's bothering him and I rather ask once we have everything else cleared up."

"Right, right. Well, let's see... Was the only murder weapon at the scene that gun?" Liy glanced over at everyone else. "Because I don't remember seeing anything else there."

"T-That sorta seems like it." Dora messed with her bag. "Could that mean the gun was used to kill b-both of them?"

"I sortaaaa doubt that's the case. There was an obvious gunshot on Pencil, but Gelatin?? Nope. None of that!" Ruby shook her head. "He must've been killed by something else."

"Interesting... Why wo-"

"They were murdered by different people." 8-Ball spoke bluntly. "Monoroku, were the murders of Pencil & Gelatin by the same cause? Or different."

"Heyheyhey, let's just not assume that!" Taco was a little surprised by his words.

Dora frowned, looking away. "H-He might be onto something..."

It took a few moments, but Monoroku noticed the silence and looked at them. "H-Huh?... What did you guys ask me again..." He was leaning a bit on his chair, leaning on his hand. He seemed a little shaky as he quietly stared at them.

"As I've said before. Were Gelatin & Pencil's deaths the same cause or were they both different?"

Monoroku sighed. "That's your job to figure out..." He glanced to the side. "But fine, I-I'll clarify it because I don't have anything holding me back anymore from telling you all."

"So, well, yes. They were indeed killed with different methods."

"Then there's our proof. There's no reason they'd be killed in different ways." 8-Ball simply spoke, staring at all of them with no true sign of emotion. He felt broken... From everything that had happened. Loser

was one of the only things moving him forward but he completely lost that.

He needed to figure out which one of the girls did it... For him.

"That seems about correct... Pencil was murdered from a headshot, but, what about Gelatin?" Liy pondered.

Dora glanced away. "T-There's no true sign of what had happened to him... No blood from him or anything." She spoke softly. "A-All of the blood was from Pencil."

"Hmmm... I swore I saw something very VERY important on his body. It was marks." Ruby spoke. "I never got that close of a look but it was definitely something off with his throat..."

"His throat?"

"Yup!"

8-Ball looked down a bit, frowning. "He might've been choked or grabbed there." He spoke.

"So we think his method of death is choking then?" Liy raised an eyebrow over the proposal. "It does seem likely..."

Dora sighed. "Well, wait. I can't figure why a weapon that seemed to never be around in the school be used for Pencil then... Choking for Gelatin? S-Something isn't adding up here..."

"Hm..." Ruby perked up a bit. "Wait! With the murders done... We should be allowed to show what we got for our motives, right?"

"Oh, that's right..." Liy looked at everyone else before up at Monoroku. "Is this allowed?"

"...Yes."

"Alright then! On the count of 3, show the cards, that should be easy peasy then." Ruby chirped.

Liy seemed wary, going to slip out her small slip of paper out of her

pocket. She examined everyone else as they did the same.

"1..."

"2..."

"3..."

A faint sound of ripping echoed in the trial room, making the entire room go silent before each of the students could reveal their slips of paper.

"...W-What..?" Dora held her paper tightly, looking around for the source of the sound until laying her eyes on the culprit behind it...

Liy.

"What was that for..." 8-Ball instantly got suspicious. "Is there something you're hiding from us?"

"..No. I'm not."
Liy gave a deadpan look as she let the two split pieces fall slowly down to the floor. "The motive won't help us solve this murder. H-He has to have killed himself. There's no other solution."

"Liy." 8-Ball felt himself fuming at her dismissive nature, "He didn't kill himself. We already decided this."

"Then who the hell could've?! Nothing's adding up besides THAT." Liy snapped at him.

Taco gulped a little, having been watching everyone. "Guys-"

Ruby paused, suddenly realizing something. "...Wait." She looked at Monoroku, before back down at her slip. "...W-Who was the *mastermind* ?"

Silence.

"W-What? Why the hell would you ask something like that?!" Liy seemed pretty tense from the question Monoroku was just asked. 8-Ball muttered something under his breath. Everyone seemed visibly confused. "Ruby, answer m-"

Monoroku took a deep breath, his eyes slowly swelling up with tears coming down his cheeks...

"Gelatin."

"..."

Hesitance filled his voice as he was quivering a little. He had pented

this up for so long... He knew exactly who had done it. He needed to at least let out one thing.

"Gelatin is the mastermind. He was the one who had set this up. Whoever had that slip is true."

Everyone was stunned, or at least, most of them. They were revealed VERY important information, Taco thought to herself before glancing at Ruby.

"...H-How did you know we all had slips relating to that?"

"...I saw Pencil's."

"You... what?"

Ruby held her arms, uncomfortable. "Loser was the mastermind in her slip."

8-Ball bit his lip. "...So.. The person who had killed Loser didn't even have his name mentioned as the mastermind?"

"I-It seems so." Dora shakingly said, overwhelmed. "That... explains it. Gelatin killed Pencil. He had the gun."

"Then how did Gelatin die..?" Taco tilted her head.

"Haven't you realized? Pencil must've realized Gelatin was behind it... She's been on the verge of snapping as soon as both Match and Leafy had died." Liy spoke. "She killed him."

Ruby covered her mouth from that. "She- She killed him?! For... us..?"

"It seems like so." 8-Ball went to cover himself a little with his beanie. "Well then... Liy."

"Huh?-"

"Explain yourself. Now." He growled. "You ripped the only thing that could've protected yourself from being it. What was on that slip of paper."

"W-What?! Now you're throwing fucking accusations?" Liy growled, gripping her podium.

"To be frank, as obvious as it seems that Loser probably killed himself... You seem so insistent. As if you *want* us to believe that." Taco raised a point. "So... I think I'm on 8-ball's side with this."

Ruby glanced over to Taco, before to Dora. "I..." She wasn't sure what to decide, going to quickly shut herself up. She felt shaky... She just wanted this to be over and done with by now.

"Answer me."

"..."

"What is it? Why can't you just tell us?" 8-Ball tilted his head, frowning a little at her.

Liy looked away, refusing to speak. She was tense... As if she did indeed have some part in it.

Taco looked worriedly at her, before at everyone else. "Well wait... Didn't he write his own note?"

"We don't know if we did..." 8-Ball lowly spoke. "After all, most of his written works ended up being typed up."

"Except for ONE thing we have access to..." Ruby reminded, looking blankly at Monoroku. "Do you have our script and the book at the crime screen, by any chance?"

He had looked over to her, giving her a small and silent nod as he seemingly magically made both items appear out of nowhere and went to go and hand it to her by throwing it. Ruby went to catch them, before looking. "Hm..."

She took some time to compare the two, before raising her eyebrows and looking at everyone else.

"It's not his writing."

"That confirms it." 8-Ball looked back at Liy, who seemed to be stubborn still. "It's confirmed he was set up like so... And there's only one person that has been suspicious this entire time."

"...Liy. You're the one who killed him then, aren't you." 8-Ball gave a distasteful glare at her, before glancing away.

Everyone else turned their heads over to her, as Liy glanced back at them. She felt pressure from all of them... She couldn't take it anymore. She scowled a little before turning over to all of them and crossing her arms.
"So you want to know everything? Fine." She spat. "I was the one who fucking did it, okay?"

Dora stared, shocked from the confession..."...W-What..? Why?"

"Because..."

She glanced down, her hands gripped into fists. "This was all a part of the plot that Gelatin had." She growled a little, looking away in shame. "...H-He promised me something in exchange for some... 'revenge.' He said it as."

Ruby perked up with the sudden new information. "Huh? So wait..."

"You betrayed us all. And for what?"

"..."

She sighed.

"...I needed to know more about myself." Liy turned away, over at Monoroku. "He knew that I had his slip... It was only bad luck that he was able to get me to do it." She huffed a little, glancing a little downwards. "...Now that he's dead, I'll never be able to learn more about myself." She turned back to them, frowning.

"So fine. Execute me all you want..."

"At least I know I tried."

...

8-Ball stared at her, his eyes forming droplets of water. "Y-You..." He didn't say anymore, going to pull out his PDA. Monoroku had been watching the entire time, a large wave of guilt washing over him as he watched them individually take out their PDAs... It was over. "Well then, that settles it..."

"Vote for whoever you believe is the blackened. Once I had gathered everyone's votes then it's time to reveal who it really was."

All 5 of the students had looked down at their PDAs, gazing at each individual name before making their selection and locking it in, soon the same screen as the past few times were shown. A slot machine, rolling each of the objects, representing each student. After a bit of spinning... It had landed on its target.

A light switch was landed on, which was the identifier for Liy. Soon enough... A successful ringing sound could be heard all around the room, which had shown that she was truly the one behind it.

-- **LIY** HAS BEEN FOUND GUILTY . TIME FOR PUNISHMENT ! --

Liy looked away from everyone else. "...I'll see you all on the other side." She spoke to all of them, before allowing herself to fall as the podium underneath her disappeared. It was pitch black for her... As well as the screen that was presented.

Soon enough, a title card naming the execution just like the ones before were shown:

THE FINAL SHOWDOWN: THE ULTIMATE PRIVATE INVESTIGATOR'S LAST SEARCH!

Liy could hear the announcement of the execution name come over her, making her flinch. "W-What..?" She wasn't sure how to respond, as she felt something cover her face suddenly. Monoroku had stood there, standing behind and beside her. "Get past all of the rooms in order to be able to escape. I'll explain more about your true self there." He whispered, before letting go and leaving the area. A dim light had suddenly turned on, letting the students outside of the execution watch what was about to occur.

Liy took a deep breath, trying to navigate the area. She was getting a grasp of where she was going, taking small steps ahead to make sure she wouldn't make any fatal mistakes. "...Alright then." She began to walk forward, approaching the first room. She knew she had to take her time... Even if she was so desperate to reach the end.

She just needed to know...

The lurking feeling of having forgotten everything and needing to process what she was told back then...

--

"Hello, Liy."

Liy was caught off guard from the sudden voice, having clutched her paper tightly. "...What?" She turned around, noticing Gelatin standing there with an unsettling smile. He had his hands behind his back, before moving one out to wave at her. "Didn't have a very good time after that motive, huh?" He tilted his head, observing her. Liy wasn't very amused, especially after the note that was received during the motive regarding him...

'Gelatin is the mastermind and the one behind the killing game.'

It had read, making her upset over the idea of one of them being behind it... She was intending to kill him, but was intrigued on what he had to say. After all, she might have something very important about him that was true. "What the fuck do you want." She growled, putting her slip of paper away.

"Oh, you're going to pull that on me then? Hm... Fine. I'll get straight to the point~" He mockingly told her, chuckling. "That slip of paper? Is true." He confessed, pointing to the pocket she had just put it in. "And while yes, you could kill me right now... I have a very nice offer I'd like to give you."

Liy stared, bewildered over what she was told. "Hurry the fuck up before I do."

"Calm down! It's no big deal... I mean, unless you value knowing a little tiny bit more about yourself." He moved his hand out, gazing at her with a smile plastered on his face still. "I mean... This isn't quite exactly against the rules since I'm not Monoroku, so I'll tell you this." He went to get straight to the point, humming a little and approaching her. "Kill somebody else. If you manage to get away

with it, I'll tell you everything and answer your questions about yourself. Now, THAT'S the real motive I will give you." He spoke, brushing her. Liy flinched as he did so, looking at him. "...A-And what if I don't..?"

"Well..."

"I always follow the rules. You will suffer the *consequences*." He glanced back at her. "Of course, this is only a mere offer if you do end up wanting to know... So, take your pick." He calmly said. "I'll see you later." He chuckled a little.

Liy watched as he walked off, shaking a little and holding herself.

...Knowing more about the truth..?

That's something she had been searching for... For so long... She had doubted what she had assumed for a good while now, just wanting to be told answers. Now... She had the chance. She gazed down at the ground, before nodding to herself.
She'd do it.

Now... She just had to find the right victim. . .

--

As she entered the first room, she could hear saw blades all around in the room. She took a deep breath as she moved forward. She kept

cautious of her surroundings as she advanced deeper and deeper into the room. It was a small rectangular room, with it all over the place. On the top of the room, to the sides, and most importantly, on the floor of the room. She went to move, before flinching as her leg was cut a little by a nearby blade. She bit her lip a little in pain, but kept moving.

She felt herself get real close to the blades, the loud whirring sound disturbing her as she passed by them. She knew very well this wouldn't be the only room, eventually making past it with precision to the next room.

She moved around, not noticing what it was until she went to stretch her hand out to the side and felt the walls closing in. She flinched, as her hand hit something spikey. She looked around despite being blindfolded, before beginning to rush forward to make it out of the room. She knew she didn't have much time, breathing harshly as she rushed out. She felt terrified, knowing that something bad was bound to happen if she tried to take off the blindfold to see what was going on.

The remaining four students stared anxiously. They all knew well that she had committed a crime, but every single time the executions seemed to make it seem as if the murders were merely nothing. Always so brutal...

Rubbing it in that there may be an escape.

When in the end, all of them knew, even her.

There was never any escape.

Despite Liy knowing this, she was determined to at least know who she was before she would die... Though the addition of even possibly making it out alive did make her feel even more confident. Hungry for knowledge, she ran and jumped out in time to make it to the third room. She was shaking with fear, trying to brush it off as she was trying to figure out the next room. She didn't even know how many rooms there were.

For all she knew, it could go on forever... All until she dropped dead.

She felt as if there really was an end to all of this mystery... She just needed to keep pushing forward, taking a deep breath as she felt the heat of flames throughout the room. She bit her lip a little, going to begin to run forward, and feeling the stinging sensation of fire hit her as she tried to run past and get it over with. She teared up, stumbling and tripping into the next room.

Her entire body felt numb... From all of the flames absorbing in her body... She knew she couldn't give up. No. Not yet.

"Gh-" She went to slowly raise herself up, looking around as all she saw was darkness. It was an empty black void... She wished she had somebody to hold. Somebody to tell her that things would be okay.

But she didn't.

Not at all.

She had felt so empty for so long...

Just thirsting for knowing things. She had pushed everything she thought that was holding her back away. As if they were mere toys... And now she was here. Taking the punishment and karma for everything she had done.

She groaned a little, going to stand and move forward.

She was moving a lot more messily, her steps wobbly as she moved. All she could think of was the everlasting freedom she'd get at the end of this... She felt empty. So empty. She just needed it to be filled... She didn't want to die empty.

She didn't want to die without knowing.

That's all she could think of now...

Knowing.

Knowing...

She wasn't paying attention anymore, feeling her leg get pierced by a wooden spike from below. She cried out as she was, knowing this may be over... She looked around, moving off of it and quickly stumbling forward before falling. She didn't know what was left

She was about to give in to the hopelessness and despair of the situation before hearing faint footsteps. "..?" She glanced up, at least the best she could. She was on the ground now, merely crawling. "...W-Who-" She tried to reach out, for something. Anything.

Shaking, she had heard a voice from the darkness...

Something that... made her happy...

"Y-You can take off your blindfold now."

She gasped out a little in surprise at what she had heard, going to slowly move her hand over to the blindfold and went to tear it off of herself. Her hands were shaking as she had the blindfold in hand... Looking up to see...

Monoroku was standing there, having a gun out and pointed towards her. He was shaking a bit, staring at her fearfully. "...W-Welcome to the end." He spoke lowly, gripping the gun. "As promised, I'll answer one question about yourself... Anything." He bit his lip. "...B-But after..." He shook the gun in his hand, glancing to the side and tearing up. "I need to follow the rules *he* had set for me... E-Even if he isn't here anymore."

"..."

Liy growled a little, but knew she had to make this count. "...Okay." She knew she wasn't going to last any longer... But... She just needed to know. One thing.

The thing she had been wondering this entire time...

"..."

"..W-Wh-What made me forget about m-myself..?"

Monoroku stared. "I-" He looked away. "...A-Are you sure you want that to be your question."

"Yes."

He took a deep breath, before going to stop his shaking and look right at her. "Liy..." He started, tearing up a little and gripping the trigger of the gun as he was preparing to shoot. "I'm sorry..."

"But I don't know what made you forget."

Liy stared with wide-eyed surprise... He didn't..? She growled. "YOU-" She was so mad... All... All of that...

For nothing?..

"...Please forgive me."

Monoroku stared, lifelessly at the body as she had collapsed into a pool of blood from the headshot. He was shaking, tearing up, and dropping the gun. He didn't know what to say...

The four students quietly stared at the screen as she was killed off, simple as that. It was expected... But heartbreaking still. Every. Single. Time. 8-Ball glanced away once she was shot, huffing a little. He knew she killed his closest friend but... He knew even she didn't deserve that. Nobody deserved any of this.

The painful killing game had traumatized them all...

...Was it finally over?

CHAPTER 5 | END.
4 OUT OF 17 REMAIN.

HI SO UH... yeSDLBLSNGVKSDBGOPHGDSG oh myt fod this was a fucking nigfhtmare tgo write im so sorry if you're so confused or anything i just hope this makes sense,, but yes.
there is one more chapter.
after that... well, it's all over. i'd like to say thank you for anyone who had read through this entire goddamn book and my nightmare of a

writing over the course of over a year. also the art is inconsistent af but shhh i'm not going back~ thank you for reading! stay tuned for the final chapter. ^^

[-] Epilogue

Monoroku stared.

He felt shaky over what he had done... He killed so many people. It was all his fault... He glanced to the side, taking a deep breath and muttering something under his breath. Even if he was merely a puppet to him, he never had done anything to prevent it in the first place. All of the energy he had... All of the eagerness for murder...

It was all faked.

All for this stupid...

little game...

That he needed to put an end to. He groaned a little, covering his face as he knew the survivors of this nightmare could watch him from behind a screen. A camera recording what he was doing. He glanced around, before going to turn away and walk off into the darkness...

Taco hesitated, glancing at everyone else. "..S-So uh..." She decided to speak up, hating hearing the silence after the gun drop... It was as if nobody's there... All of them were speechless, confused, trying to process all of this. "W-What do we do?-" She asked them, playing with her sleeves nervously. Dora looked down to the ground, tears streaming down her cheek. "I-I don't know." She weakly spoke, her voice hoarse... She felt... at least a little close to her. Before she had pushed everyone away. 8-Ball frowned. "...There's no way this can continue." He spoke firmly, going to slowly back away from the podium. "After all... Surely if there's only 4 of us left with the one behind this dead.."

"It'd only make sense."

Ruby nodded. "Y-Yeah!- So... W-We can go home now... Right?-"

"...I-I'd like that..." Dora sniffled a little, not knowing how to react to everything... She felt so vulnerable... She didn't know if she could keep going on if it did.

Taco frowned. "...Look uh, I hate to be a downer but Monoroku's still alive you know..."

"Well, I'm not going to hurt you any longer."

The sudden voice made all of them jump, looking over towards it. Monoroku was standing there. He had his hands behind his back, having a deadpan expression... He felt empathy for the remaining students, realizing what mistakes he had made. "...I know you all won't probably forgive me but.. I apologize. For all of this."

"..." 8-Ball looked away. "...It's.." He didn't want to forgive him just yet, shaking his head a little. "...Right. What do you plan on doing now..."

Monoroku looked over to the door he had entered from, where the exit of the trial room was. "Follow me, please... I'd like to show you all something very important..." He went to turn away from them, beginning to walk out of the doors. He had expected them to follow after, knowing they'd be hesitant. Ruby paused, looking at everyone else. "We should all go..."

"What if it's a trap? We don't know where he's leading us." Taco uncomfortably said.

Dora looked at them. "...We should give him one last chance. He did say sorry."

"We'll just have to see where this ends us up..." 8-Ball finally said. "Come on." He began to take charge, walking out of the trial room and following him. The girls eventually had followed, knowing that there really was nowhere else to go. He had glanced back and was a little relieved to see all of them following. He felt shaky, terrible... The sudden feeling of guilt was washing over him...

He knew he needed to take action and pay the consequences.

He led the group of 4 up the stairs, onto the 4th floor... Where he had remembered something very important. He had hoped they'd at least appreciate what he was soon to show... "Right this way." He walked down the hallway, not looking back at the anxious students. They were all looking at each other, not saying any words. It was dead silence... The heavy air of the terrible things that had occurred were lingering around, making it difficult to want to speak. Whatever had laid ahead for them was unknown, obscured in a dark void...

Maybe there was a future. But if it had regarded staying here then it would be a very grim one. Monoroku had entered the office. The Principal's office. "...We're here." He softly said, gagging a little from the thick stench of old blood. It was now he had taken the time to look back at all of them. "I know a way out." He firmly said, hands behind his back as he stood upright.

"...Wait, what?-" Taco hesitated. "You're... letting us out?" She was the first to speak, looking at the others. She knew they had been there much longer than her, feeling sympathetic to them. Ruby covered her mouth from the news. "W-We're going home!-" She had so much mixed feelings, but the emotion of relief and overjoy had completely taken over. She missed all of her other friends so much... She didn't even think she'd see them again.

"...Yes. You all are." Monoroku sighed. "But you all NEED to promise me one, and one thing specifically." He kept a weak expression, not having the heart to feel anything anymore. He felt heartbroken... He was used to hurt the same people he was always so formerly eager to help and assist. . .

He didn't even know much in reality.

All he could do, now broken out of this terrible state, was to try to undo the harm done as much as possible... Whatever it was, the secret of this needed to be kept.

So...

"Never tell anyone about what happened here. Absolutely nothing. Lie and say you got kicked and the school prefers to keep their methods to teach the students secret. Understood?"

They all had nodded towards what he had said. 8-Ball glanced to the side. "Let's just go now..." He began to walk forward until Dora suddenly grabbed his arm and stopped him. "...W-Wait. What about you??" She asked Monoroku.

All he could do is give the most sincere thing he had this entire time... A small smile, tears coming out of his cheeks as he glanced to the side.

"**Don't worry about me. I'll be alright.**"

Dora hesitated, before letting go and nodding. "...Okay.." 8-Ball stumbled forward a little, looking over at her and biting his lip. "Right well..." He felt bad hearing that but tried to brush it off. He was looking around the room a little, out of curiosity... He only remembered entering this room once before leaving as soon as he possibly could due to the thick scent. He was trying to tolerate it as he was stuck in here with the others. "Where's the exit." He asked

sternly.

Monoroku looked up, nodding. "Right... This way."

He walked up towards one of the shelves in the corner of the room. He tried to not inhale any of the fumes as he went to push the shelf to the side to reveal a trap door that was partially hidden and inaccessible on the floor. "Here." He gestured, going to open it. "This is your way out of here. Stay safe, you 4."

8-Ball gazed at the trapdoor in surprise, before looking up at him and giving a simple nod. "...Thank you." He muttered, before turning to the other 3.

Dora gulped a little, going to begin to approach him. "A-Are we sure we could trust this?" She played with her hands and backpack, still upset over what all of them had just gone through. Taco sighed, looking down at it as she walked up by her. "I think we should sorta take the risk... You know, since we got nowhere else to go?"

Ruby looked away, before going to look back and shove everyone to the side. "...I'll see you guys on the other side." She spoke, before turning over to face the trapdoor and opening it to enter inside. There was a ladder leading down to somewhere seemingly unknown, it was... decently dark down there. Monoroku had noticed this, quietly going to tap 8-Ball on the shoulder.

He turned over to him, a little startled before looking down at the flashlight handed to him. "...Thanks." He muttered, before going to follow after Ruby and climb down as well. Taco shortly followed, leaving Dora there. She began to move towards the trapdoor, before turning over to look at Monoroku. "...G-Good luck." She murmured weakly, before turning away and finally leaving the school with the other survivors down the trapdoor.

What was at the bottom appeared to be a narrow corridor, as she met up with the other three. 8-Ball had the flashlight on, looking at the others. "I'll lead us." He spoke, before going to begin walking down the hallway. He wasn't sure what they'd find but... He honestly had nothing left to lose at this point. He wanted to make sure the girls would be alright, knowing all four of them had been through a lot

together.
The passage was long. It was dark and it seemed to have no end... All of the students walked in silence, not wanting to speak about the events that had just happened. They all survived though... That was a large achievement.

Even if they had lost so many people.

So many friends.

Their lives would never change, that's for sure...

Maybe they should keep in touch.

Maybe not.

Well, whatever it was, at least they could be grateful they would all be able to leave from the dreaded place they were kept captive, for who knows how long.

8-Ball kept moving, before eventually... seeing light. He looked back at the others, unable to make out their faces. All he felt was relief. Pure relief. Whatever had waited for them at the other side... It better be good. The others had soon enough, noticed the light. Dora was tearing up a little, beginning to pick up the pace as she approached the light. Taco smiled a little weakly to herself. Ruby was shaking a

little, walking right by 8-Ball's side.
The despair and misery that had affected the four were slowly sucking away, knowing that it'll be all over... now.

It was over, as they reached the exit and looked over to what would be their new lives waiting ahead. Unaware of the future that awaits them.

It was finally over.

THE END.

That's the end of Exitronpa! Thank you so much for everyone who had read through my terrible writing journey to get to this point. It took a lot of effort and over a year, but I'm glad to have finished. This is it for now. Stay tuned for more... maybe. :)